This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

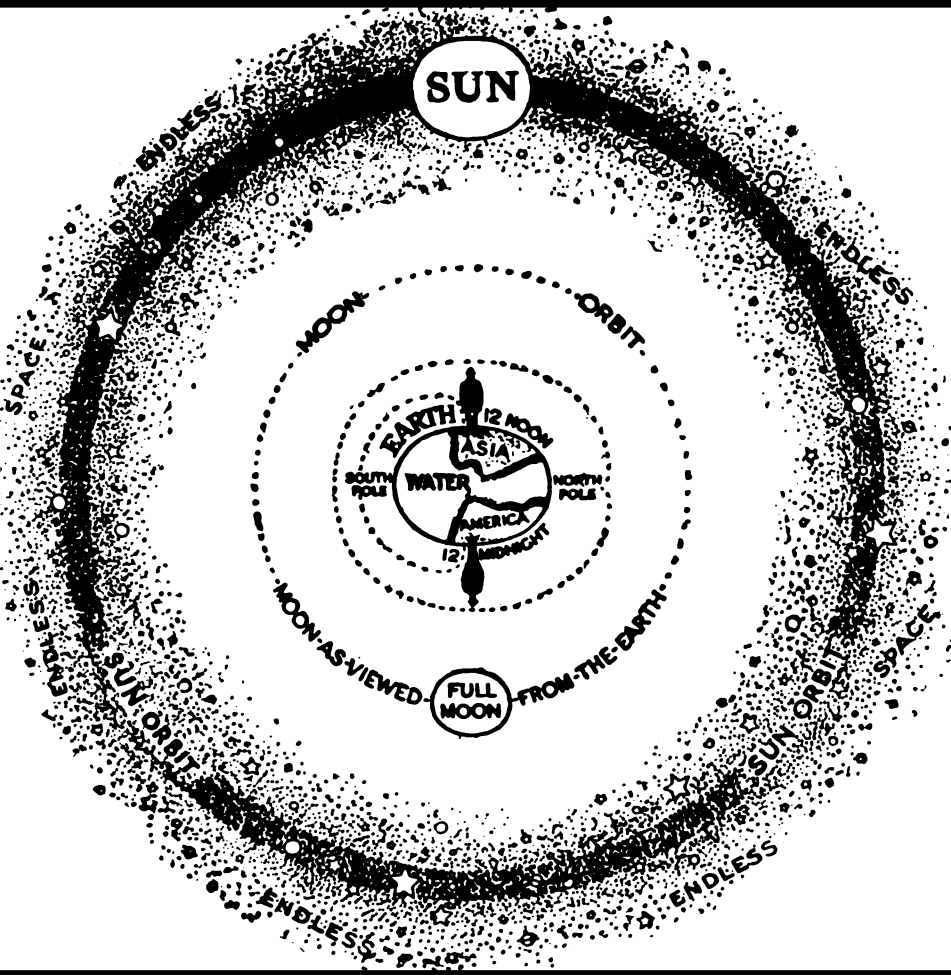
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



The Law of Nature and the Wonders of Ourselves

Law of nature publishing house,
New York, T. Day

Digitized by Google

KD 64169

Harvard College Library

FROM

Pres. C. W. Eliot

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

KNOWLEDGE
Water

TRUTH
Earth

THE LAW OF NATURE AND THE WONDERS OF OUR SELVES

A REVELATION TO SELF-KNOWLEDGE AND SELF-EFFICIENCY

THE SCIENTIFIC UPLIFT OF MAN TO HIS PROPER POSITION IN THE UNIVERSE

THE LAW OF NATURE PUBLISHING HOUSE
NEW YORK CITY, U. S. A.

Price $1.50. By mail or express prepaid, $1.65

Fire
POWER

Air
FREEDOM

Digitized by Google

NH.359.14..
KD 64169
HARVARD LAW LIBRARY
DEC 18 1914
CAMBRIDGE, MASS.
Prof. C. W. Eliot.

Copyrighted, 1914
By
THE LAW OF NATURE PUBLISHING HOUSE

ALL RIGHTS, INCLUDING THAT OF TRANSLATIONS,
RESERVED IN ALL COUNTRIES.

Digitized by Google

Compliments of the Author M.G.

As there are many different thinkers,
Thinking in many different ways,
I therefore write into this book
Many different paragraphs
In many different styles;
For I am certain that their variations
Will do someone, somewhere, some good.

Learn to read and to understand
All the hard thoughts but true lessons
Written in this book,
With the same kind of a smile,
As you do understand
The easy lessons with a smile.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

PAGE

PART BEGINNINGLESS—Valuable Varying Thoughts 1

0. General Forethought 40

1. Ancient History and Modern Thought—True Facts About the Bibles, and the Words Angel, Lord, Deity, Jehovah God, Revealed 45

2. A Trip Beyond the Sun 75

3. What Nature Is—The Wonders of Human Superior Intelligence in Designing, Building, and Acting, as Against the Rough and Unintelligent Action of Wild Nature 80

4. Creation of Air and Matter—Perpetual Creation of Air and Matter in the Universe, and Its Perpetuality 87

5. How Things Grow in Nature—The Secret How Things Develop and Grow Revealed 94

6. The Word Pray Analyzed 96

7. Thought—The Only True and Scientific Way How to Think Right and How not to Think Wrong—Why, How, and Where a Thought is Formed and Created—How You Create and Receive a Thought—How Thought Acts Individually, Universally, Positively, and Negatively—The Mystery of Mind-Soul-Life Revealed 109

8. The Human Body—How Original Human Bodies Develop and Grow into the World 141

Digitized by Google

PART PAGE

9. Circumcision—Tree Grafting and Circumcision 162

10. Food—True Science About Food and the Feeding of the Body that Saves Body and Money 170

11. How to Stop Bad Habits—How to Stop Smoke, Drink, and Other Bad Habits .. 187

12. Germs and a Sneeze 192

13. Breathing—How to Breathe Correctly ... 197

14. Air—What Air Is and Does—The Words Unity and Trinity Revealed 203

15. How to Develop the Brain—How to Change the Animal Grade Thinking Brain into an Ideal and Superior Grade 209

16. Death—Death Explained 226

17. Life—Life Explained 237

18. The Life Root of a Human Being—The Perpetual Life Root of a Human Being Explained 244

PART ENDLESS—A Personal Chat with the Reader 248

Digitized by Google

PART BEGINNINGLESS

VALUABLE VARYING THOUGHTS

THE word Atom, as found in this book, like the word molecule, means the smallest particle of a thing visible or invisible. Take a lump of sugar for instance; strike it with a hammer and it will spatter into thousands of small specks of sugar. If you keep on hammering, it will finally become powdered sugar, and if you still continue to hammer it, the powdered sugar will, in time, commence to fly into the air and after a while you will have nothing left at all; because all your sugar will be flying and existing in the air as fine atoms of sugar but in which case you will not be able to gather them again. In other words, the sugar will be in the air in small and tiny atoms not visible to the naked eye. So do we have atoms of air, ether, radium, hydrogen, oxygen, electricity, and all other kinds of matter and air atoms mixed together and existing in the air.

The word Universe, as written in this book, refers to and includes our globe of earth and water, all matter upon it as humanity, animals, buildings, all its surrounding air, moon, stars, sun, and all gases, vapors, and air beyond and around the sun forever onward and ENDLESS in SPACE.

The words Globe, Earth or World, as written in this book, mean and refer to matter alone, just as you see all matter as ourselves including animals while in moving, acting, and enjoying real living LIFE, and such inanimate objects of matter as water, earth, metals, lumber, rock, marble, grain, fruit, machinery, buildings, and so forth.

Digitized by Google

The word Chaos, as found in this book, means destruction, death or no feeling.

The words Everlasting, Eternal, and Perpetual, as written in this book, refer to and mean eternal existence on this earth or your body alive, not dead in a grave.

The expression that the earth turns on axis is wrong and should never be used again, because the earth never turns on anything. The earth or globe like a ball, a balloon, or a flying machine in the air, revolves, sways, turns, exists, and moves in air or space only.

The expression that the sun rises and sets is false, for the sun neither rises nor sets. It is the earth turning away from the sun that causes darkness, and this we call night. This turning down action is the natural cause of making us sleep. It is the turning of the earth toward the sun that causes morning or daylight, and everything moves up and gets to life and into working action again.

Supposing you could take a flying machine trip straight into the air toward the sun, leaving Los Angeles during any day in the month of January or February, starting off at eight in the morning, and let us say you could fly a distance of twenty million miles in one hour. Supposing you would then stop (the time being nine A.M.) and look down toward the earth and see what was going on. Here is the scene you would be apt to see at one and the same time and for hours so. If you looked toward Los Angeles you would find people bathing in the sea. At Denver, Colorado, you would be apt to see the snow falling, and if you peeped at the same moment at Cuba and Florida, you would find people bathing in the sea, too; while in New York, Providence and Boston, the weather might be at freezing point or below zero. The time in Los Angeles would be nine in the morning; in Denver ten; in Havana, Cuba, and in Florida eleven in the morning;

Digitized by Google

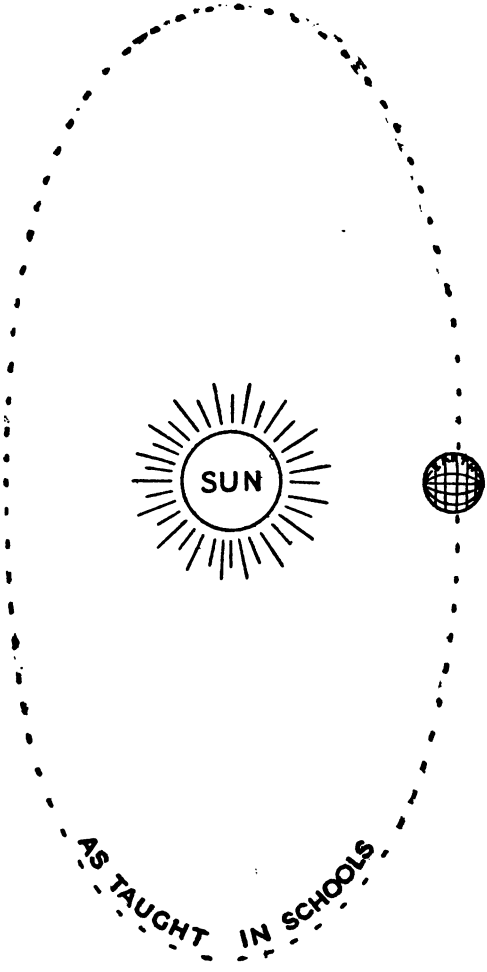
while in Boston and New York the sun's rays would indicate just twelve noon at that very same instant.

While one part of humanity in the world is eating dinner at twelve noon, another part of humanity below it is fast asleep, because it is with them twelve midnight at that same moment. While it is twelve midnight and twelve noon with some people on the earth, it is six in the morning and six in the afternoon with others at that same instant.

Searching into astronomy and geography I find that not all things are clear as yet, and perhaps will not be for several years to come, or until wireless stations are established throughout the world. A quick checking back will then be possible and more accurate knowledge will then arrive. In the meanwhile I am putting into this book two methods showing how the universe operates. The one on the next page gives you an idea of the method taught in schools and colleges, which shows the sun in the center, and the earth and moon traveling around it in about a year's time with a daily complete revolution of the earth.

If it were true that the earth travels around the sun, and in a tipping style that causes six months day and night at the North and South Poles, it would have to be true also that Lower California, Florida, Mexico, Panama, Cuba, India, Turkey, Spain, Egypt, China, Africa, Belgium, Arabia, Argentina, Brazil, and Australia should always have a twelve hour day and night, and no short days and long nights nor long days and short nights; but this is not the fact. As the above named places are situated on and close to the Equator, and far enough from either the North or South Poles, and, with the sun's rays constantly shining directly upon them, and the earth constantly turning completely around in twenty-four hours, why not a steady twelve hour day and night in the above named places! Anyone with thought can figure out that that would have to

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

be the case if the earth were really traveling around the sun. Furthermore, during the six months daylight at the North Pole, the entire land north of the Equator is entitled to a steady six months twelve hour day and night, and such land takes in all Europe, Russia, Canada, Alaska, and most of the United States. But is such the case? This shows that there has been something wrong with someone in the past!

If you were to step into the largest observatory in the world and look through the largest telescope made or will ever be made, you would then see not much more or rather not observe a great deal more than before looking. For the following reasons. If you look through a telescope in the day time, the sun's rays and daylight prevents you from seeing all you really ought to see. During cloudy time you see much less in distant space, and during the evening, when you could really see something through a large telescope, you find yourself forced away from the sun, and you can see nothing at all of what is going on in front of the sun. We are then in the same position as you would be if someone would force you from standing in front of a building facing the street, to the back of the building facing the alley, and keeping you there for hours.

If I and a million other men were to draw you pictures or photograph all the air or space in millions of different styles, showing you many new stars or comets, we would all be drawing or photographing uselessly because we could continue to photograph more new stars and comets forever; for the sky, stars, space, and air changes constantly back and forth into different vapors, the same as steam, smoke, and odor changes constantly in the kitchen of a busy restaurant. And so will it be always.

The best method to gain a true idea of how the universe operates, is to watch with the naked eye and brain how other natural things grow and develop in nature,

Digitized by Google

and you will then have an almost accurate design of the operation of the universe.

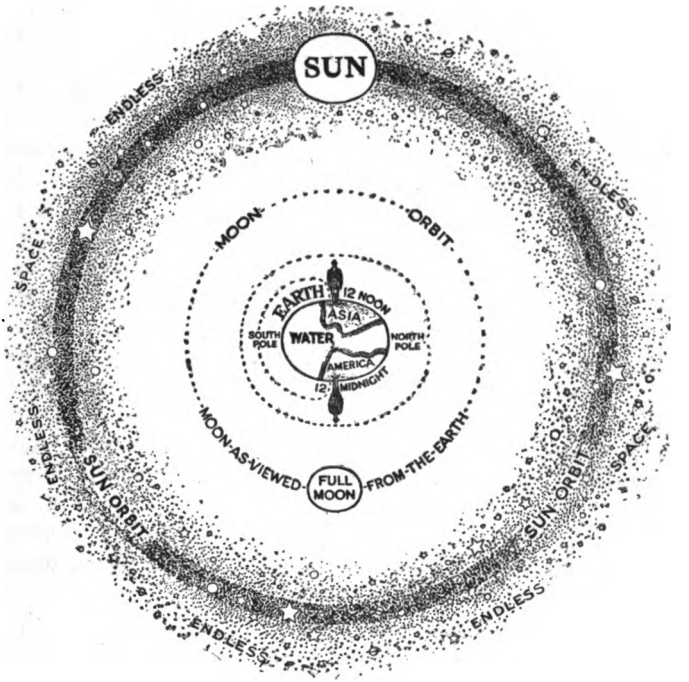
All things grown, developed, and made by nature, including herself, is, as a rule, so done very economically. Take an egg, and you will find one layer inside of another; as the shell, whiting, and yolk. Take an onion, cut it in half, and you will find one layer inclosed inside of another. Take an apple, orange, or any other kind of fruit, vegetable, grain, nut, tree, or animal, and you will find one layer inside of another; namely, the skin first, and then the substance inside of it. And the same, at least, ought to hold good with the operation of the universe.

The universe operates perpetually in a style similar to that of the flame of a burning lamp. Our earth acts like the wick in the lamp, only we are inside of the cold moon and hot sun gas and air orbits, or like the yolk is inside the whiting and eggshell. The moon's orbit is always around us like the dark part in the flame near the wick, or like the whiting surrounding the yolk. The sun's orbit is all around us and incloses our earth and moon orbit, and is like the red or upper part of the flame in a burning lamp, or like the shell of an egg. Beyond and around the sun's orbit are the finest grade of purified air atoms which continue endless in space, the same as all endless air and space surrounds a burning lamp or an egg that is placed out in the open air.

The cut on the next page gives you my simplified idea of a general view and operation of the universe, just as you would see it if you were in a flying machine beyond the sun's orbit.

If my method or my idea, as to how the universe operates, does not suit you, and you like the other method better, then make use of the other. If both the other and my method does not suit you, and you have a better idea than the two given in this book,

Digitized by Google



Natural and Perpetual Operation of the Universe.

Digitized by Google

then use your own. You may be no more wrong nor no more right on the subject than I am, or all the professors and astronomers in the world are. So why dispute or worry over a mere useless trifle!

Paint a ball black at one end and green at the opposite end to represent the North and South Poles. Paint the center in red and yellow dots to represent the Equator. When dry, take it outside and have someone strike it while you are watching. You will find the ball turning in two different motions at the same time while in the air, going or coming. In other words, the ball will act the same as an acrobat would if he could spin his body around and around continually, and at the same time turning somersaults, in which case he would be making two different motions at the same time, and the earth makes these two different motions at the same time and eternally so.

While the ball is in the air, you will find that it will make one motion very fast and the second slow. The fast motion is imitating the twenty-four hour daily turning of our earth, while the slow motion is imitating the yearly rotation of the earth from North to South Poles. This causes the North and South Poles to be regions of six months duration of daylight and darkness respectively. In between these two extremes you naturally get long days and short nights, and vice-versa; also a steady twelve hour day and night, which exists around the Equator.

The North Pole, gradually turning away from the sun for her six months night, as in the Fall, naturally causes short days and long nights north of the Equator, for the Fall and Winter; and when it turns toward the sun for its six months daylight, as in the Spring, it naturally causes long days and short nights north of the Equator, for the Spring and Summer; and so is it in the world.

Our earth or globe is composed of about two-thirds

Digitized by Google

water and one-third matter. The earth, matter, and buildings, including ourselves, are always swimming in water, or in the seas or oceans, and the whole rotates, turns, sways, and exists in nothing but air.

Our globe of earth and water, through gravity, is constantly turning, revolving, and swaying in air and space. Her mountains and trees act like the arms of a windmill, or the flat-boards of a water-wheel, which in all cases make the windmill and the water-wheel turn; and our earth always turning and creating air, is obliged and compelled to constantly turn herself in her own air-gravity creation. She cannot stop, neither can she go backwards. The only thing she does is move and turn in space constantly and at times a trifle up or down or sideways, just as a ball, when thrown in the air, will curve on its way on account of the double motion. If she does this, it is no harm to us, neither do we notice it until we hear of a flood, cyclone, or earthquake.

All things in the universe are in shape neither perfectly round nor square; as you notice our fingers, our hands, and our bodies. It is but in some cases that accurately round things are found in nature. All accurately round and square things you see in the world in matter, as buildings, doors, wheels, and engines, are all creations, designs and complete works of man.

A mountain from the distance will appear round to us, but when we get closer to it, we find the mountain not quite as round as we imagined. It is our eyes, which are naturally grown somewhat round, that cause and make us imagine things far off to be round.

If we could fly to the moon or sun, we would find them to be spreading and moving in all different forms, like clouds overhead do, or the different shapes and designs which a fire in a stove or burning building assumes.

If it were not for the earth and its great number

Digitized by Google

of icebergs sending up their surplus coldness into the air, you could never see the moon. If it were not for the earth growing metals and a variety of vegetation, you could never see stars at all. If it were not for the great surplus heat going up into the air from the earth, chimneys, human beings and animals, you could never have a sun nor know of any. If it were not for the ordinary air you see and feel about and around you, you could never see a sun, stars, moon, water, earth, air, animals, human beings, nor our individual selves, to look at, to think of, and so name them.

All vapors and gases like air, heat, cold, fire, light, and many other grades move, run, fly, travel, and interchange constantly around the earth, on and in streets, up to the moon, stars, sun, beyond the sun, and back again.

All vapors, gases, and air are forced to move, act, and stir in space and air constantly by and through wind, matter, and its own self, the same as people, walking in crowded streets, are always obliged to walk a little to the right and then to the left, so as to keep from bumping into other people.

People always have or make a place for rest in either home, or hotel while traveling, but in all cases a person rests, moves, travels, and covers different spaces during years of time. So do all vapors, matter, gases, and air atoms, regardless of name, size, color, or shape. This work goes on always, whether we see it or not, or whether we do care to know it or not. If we do aim and learn about these things, our reward is great, because we have then acquired the understanding of natural knowledge.

All vapors and gases go up from the earth in constant streams and mix, separate, and settle in the air, the same as all vapor or smoke would mix and separate at the ceiling in your room, if you were burning bread while baking it, roasting chicken and burning it, and

Digitized by Google

burning many other things all in the same room at the same time. These gases and vapors, working on the outside, generally go up in the air as high as they can or as high as other and stronger gases allow them to go, and, as vapors and gases continually work for its separation, it therefore causes stars, moons, and suns to be. The fast revolution of the earth naturally causes some of the gases and vapors to return to it; just as you notice the mist from the ocean or lakes, after rising a certain height and other vapors and gases forcing themselves upon them, causes them to be formed into drops. When the drops become too heavy in weight, they fall down in the form of rain. If the atmosphere is cold, the same little drops become frozen, and we therefore have hail or snow. Water, when freezing, becomes ice, and ice being white in color, it is natural for snow also to be white. The same operation is continually working back and forth between and in all different grades of air, vapors, gases, light, darkness, heat, and coldness, throughout the universe.

Know, that real life or living is valuable on this earth only. Anything existing away from the earth like air, vapor, gas, or matter atoms, is always in a half-finished state, either moving toward development or destruction, and is therefore in a lifeless state. Also notice that everything in matter is drawn down toward the earth. The earth acting as matter-magnetism will draw a bit of ashes or a paper balloon down to itself from any height above.

After reading this book, pay no attention to, nor waste any time on astrologers or star-gazers, but understand and know that you can see and know just as much with your own eyes and brain, as any other person in the world does, with or without a telescope.

Whenever you look without thinking, or think without looking, and whenever you look and think at the same time, do so, with your eyes and brain thrown out

Digitized by Google

farther and higher than the top of a house-chimney or a factory smoke-stack. After this, when you look and think, allow your eyes, brain, and mind to fly out, shoot out, spread out, far, far, into space and distance. By so doing, you will be able to see better and understand easily and more, for, remember, you hurt no one through this act and you are doing yourself a world of good and without extra expense on your part. If you do your own looking and thinking on a large and broad scale, you will grow yourself a pair of new strong eyes and brain, thereby saving the expense of purchasing useless artificial eyeglasses; neither will you have to hire artificial thinkers to do wrong thinking for you.

The reason our ancestors made slow or no progress at all in the past thousands of years of time (as you notice the European people do not, even at the present time) is because they wasted all their time, trying to learn to remember how many gods or angels are going to wait upon them to take them into air castles when they die. And strange as it may seem, but true nevertheless, the moment after death, they forget their whole lifetime's effort of trying to remember an impossibility. I remember well, when my grandfather died many years ago, he kissed me good-by, and the moment after death, I pinched him good and hard to see if he would answer me in thoughts whether he sees or meets any gods or angels about him to take him or his soul to heaven. But not a thought could I get or squeeze out of him about such a reality. This was convincing proof to me, that everything after death is knowingless, and the same thing happens to all other dead bodies in the world. Death is, therefore, entire destruction and loss of everything and all.

Some people, even in this day of knowledge and enlightenment, seem to imagine that they still have a monopoly on all the knowledge of what is or is not

Digitized by Google

going to happen to dead bodies or souls after they are dead and buried. They waste fifty or a hundred years of good time in trying to imagine how it feels after death, but not a thought do they waste on learning how to take care of their live body, so they may keep it from dying altogether and thereby be on the safe side of life, and play a joke on the enemy, Death!

There are two grades of men in the world. One kind is the true, understanding, honest, manly, creating man, and known as a Man; the other is the imitating, weak, and false grade, and may be called a woman-man.

All letters, words, languages, alphabets, and writings that were ever invented and used, and are now being invented and used; all the bibles, dictionaries, books, or writings that were ever written in the world, or are being written, or will ever be written, were, are, and always will be done by ordinary men; not as some weak-minded people imagine, that it was done by some mysterious God.

Some of the Jewish people consider Saturday as their holy sabbath. The Arab and the Turk makes his holy sabbath on Friday. A great many Christians and Gentiles make their sabbath on Sunday. But the old universe cares not! The earth turns, the moon moves, the ocean breathes, the wind runs, the snow flies, the rain falls, the trees bloom, the buds blossom, the flowers grow, the birds sing, and the sun shines on Monday and Wednesday, as well as on Tuesday and Thursday; and the same operation and work continues and is kept up on Friday just as well as on Sunday. And, oh yes! Little lambs and good-sized elephants, as well as little kittens, and even babies, too, are born on the holy sabbath or on Saturday, as well as on any other day!

"'But Who Should Worry!'
BETTER SMILE AND ENJOY."

Digitized by Google

If the Jewish religion would be the best or a better way for humanity to follow, everybody in the world would by this time be born and raised a Jew, because, six thousand years of time would cause to convince the most skeptical to follow in its footsteps and ideas; but as only two per cent of the world's population is Jewish, it therefore proves that the Jewish religion is a failure, although old in age.

If Catholicism had any value to itself, we would all be Catholics by this time, because, nineteen hundred and thirteen years would be long enough to prove its real value, if any. But as Catholicism only counts about two per cent of the world's population as its followers, it, too, proves itself a failure, as far as the advancement of humanity is concerned. Of course, it may be a financial success to the inside leaders, bishops, and ministers, but that is not advancing the rank and file to a higher state of mental perfection, for, if the leaders would attempt to make the financial and mental success work at one and the same time for the benefit of their followers, the bishops, fathers, pope, and cardinals would be obliged to work on farms to earn their living.

If Christian Science were the true religion, it would not have to use or apply the word "Christian" to it, because the word "Science" is, and always will be recognized by its practical applicability. When you apply the word "Christian," or any other word to the word science, without actually showing and proving real matter or substance behind such word, you have then abused and spoiled the meaning and value of the two words.

Christian Science absolutely denies matter. If their teaching and preaching is true, why do they shake hands, build churches, hold services, collect or touch money, read the Bible or other books, eat food, sleep on beds, and walk on the earth, which is in all cases touching and handling matter! This is not practising

Digitized by Google

what they are preaching, is it? In other words, they are constantly sinning day and night!

Christian Science, like all other religions, will accomplish nothing of value to any or many of its followers. Christian Science was the origination of a weak and wrong-minded woman, with plenty of strong men to help collect the money, in about the same way as all other religions do. But as a woman's creation is always a weak creation, the results are always destructive. As you may notice over in England, the women first worked themselves and their husbands to death, in order to get enough money together to build up churches, and as they had the churches all completed and used them, they suddenly changed their minds, as women will do, and became suffragettes, and as suffragettes they are burning down the very same holy churches they previously sweated for and caused to appear. The end of Christian Science will be the same.

If all other mixed religions, sects, cults, and creeds would have anything of value behind themselves to offer, we would all follow them. But, as sixty-five per cent of the population in the United States belongs to no church, believes in no God, nor prays to any; and, as they get along splendidly without God, church, or pray, it therefore positively proves that there is nothing but falsehoods and schemes behind all religions.

There always was, is, and always will be but one true religion in the world, and that is knowing and understanding nature in its entirety, including the individual self. It is as easy and much easier to learn to understand nature's true religion, than it is, a weak or wrong religion, originated and formed by weak-minded male and female fanatics. A wrong religion will cause you to go wrong, act wrong, and will destroy you faster than any other thing in the world. You will be punished for even contributing toward the

Digitized by Google

upkeep of a wrong creed or religion, regardless of its name; while, if you learn true knowledge, you will always be truly, immensely, and happily rewarded, and the cost is almost nothing to study it, to practice it, and is easy to live it.

If suffragism would have any true or real value to itself, everybody in the United States or the world would at the present time be living in Denver or in Colorado. Because, thirty years of suffragism in Colorado would draw to itself all the neighbors from all other states and finally from the whole world. But suffragism, another woman or man-woman's idea, is accomplishing nothing for Colorado. In other words, Colorado gained no more during thirty years of suffragism than if women had not voted at all. All Colorado receives because of suffragism is trouble in paying and furnishing useless extra ballots and voting places so thoughtless women may write an "X" on a piece of paper.

I lived in Denver, Colorado, for ten years and voted with the ladies all that time, and, as I watched conditions in general, I ought to be able to speak the truth. Votes for women simply mean more ballots to be printed and wasted, and, since ballots and voting places cost money, the city and county is obliged to increase the taxes upon all property in that vicinity in order to pay the printing bill and other election expenses, and, as taxes are raised upon property it naturally causes rents to go up, and as rents go up, it causes more complaints about the high cost of living. Furthermore, women will always be obliged to come to men for original ideas as to how to do things, and as the best of men always keep the best ideas to themselves, you can therefore see that suffragism is a waste of time, energy and money.

The idea of suffragism is like the dog noticing his own tail and trying to catch it. As he turns he causes

Digitized by Google

his body to turn and turn, and works himself to death trying to catch his own tail. The dog soon discovers his tiresome, useless, killing effort, and stops. But not quite so does it work out in the case of suffragism. If the vote is once granted to the women in a state, although they run and turn a useless expense upon society as well as upon their own selves, we cannot stop them from voting, neither have they sense enough to stop voting themselves, as the dog stops, and the useless expense is continued from one generation to another and nothing but trouble is gained or accomplished.

You must bear in mind also that as soon as women get the vote, a class of undesirable women from the underworld fall in line as voters. During the time I lived in Denver, this class of women voted several times on election day by simply changing their names repeatedly during the day. So was it, so is it, and so will it always be where suffragism is going to be.

If the suffragists have money and time to spare, they can find plenty of good work to do for the money and time expended. They must remember that it was men who invented and improved inventions that do most of our work, which in turn gives the human race more time and leisure than it ever had before. It is therefore the suffragettes' duty to improve and educate themselves and others as to how real things shall be done in a better way than they were done before, and not try to run governments. For instance, they should plant more fruit trees, and attend them so that fruit should not be taken off the tree when green, help and educate women of less ability toward higher knowledge, grow flowers for working girls and women, and not teach them how to strike.

Suffragettes must bear in mind that when they teach ignorant people to strike for more pay and shorter hours, and if this is granted by the manufacturer, that commodity at once increases in price and it is the

Digitized by Google

suffragettes themselves who have to pay the advance cost of the article. So you see, all foolish acts always work right back on the fool him or herself as a reward. Others, too, suffer indirectly through such turmoiling.

Since a government, a union, or suffragettes, never make good in cash to a manufacturer or individual whenever they lose in investments or industry, therefore, no government, unions, suffragettes or other set of people have a right to interfere with manufacturers as to how much profit they shall or shall not make or as to wages and hours granted to the workers. A manufacturer who causes many human beings to work and live on account of his knowledge, will always be obliged to advance prices in proportion, to suit and please himself and not to please ignorant interferers.

The suffragettes must also remember that laws passed and put into books do nobody any good unless we could afford to have a policeman attend each individual constantly in order to have him or her live in accordance with the laws passed. But such method would be too expensive and impossible because we would have no one to instruct or watch the policeman who watches us.

While one small set of women, as suffragettes, will be holding lazy jobs inside city halls, court houses, and other public places, all outside women, men, and children, rich and poor, will be working and sweating to help pay these parasites their useless salaries through taxation for which they do not render us any value whatever.

While one small set of women, as suffragettes, will cause our government institutions to be turned into love factories, the majority of the women outside will be losing their husbands, homes, and good children. I served on a jury in the District Court of Denver, Colorado, some time ago, and had the pleasure of viewing three divorces granted in less than ten minutes. I

Digitized by Google

was amazed at its rapid action, but it is true, nevertheless; and such is a daily occurrence in a state of suffragism.

Suffragettes must know that to run a government is like running a household; the more economical the household is operated the safer it is for the institution. Increasing the number of useless votes, congressmen, senators, politicians, and expenses, in addition to the trouble we already have, will not improve conditions for us, for it is like having more cooks than necessary to cook a dinner, which in all cases spoils it.

It may be perfectly true that we all have a right to vote or ride in an automobile, but the question is: Can we afford such? Can we run such? And can we take care of such? To show the reader how little value a person really gets out of voting, I might say that I have been voting and paying poll and other taxes ever since I became of age, which is many years ago, and yet, in all these years it was but once that a certain man whom I had voted for was elected. In other words, if I had not voted all these years I would have lost nothing at all. This proves that very little is gained by possessing the right to vote. What we must do is run our government with less votes, less laws, and less office holders, and not with more. Only such a method will get us out of trouble.

When the suffragettes ask all men to get out of their sunshine it proves that they do not deserve the ballot even if it were valueless. And, too, the sun shines overhead and I never saw men walking on top of women's heads keeping the sun away from them. If the suffragettes want their own sunshine, all they have to do is to march out to Colorado and expose themselves on the high mountains there, and they will get more sunshine than they deserve; and it even takes a man to give them this good and free advice. On their way to the mountains they may stop at Denver

Digitized by Google

and other Colorado cities and examine records in court houses, also politics, business, and conditions in general as they are, and they will find them to be just as dirty and just as filthy in Colorado with the women's vote as in other places without the women's vote. They will also find many of their political sisters going wrong there, too. They will find that in 1909 a woman in Denver appropriated two thousand dollars to herself from the funds of the Children's Hospital which were entrusted to her; and many other unpleasant things will they learn about woman suffrage that I do not care to mention.

Dr. Anna Shaw, president of the Woman Suffrage Party, informs us that she is instructing all her sisters to go on a tax strike, which is breaking the Postal Law by using the United States Mail to spread anarchy. But supposing the states pass a non-protection law against tax strikers! What is Dr. Shaw and her followers going to do then? A non-protection tax strike law means that the county in which such property is located eliminates it from police and law protection, and advertises it so. Tramps and thieves, reading the news, would go up to such property and destroy its fences and buildings, take anything they desired, walk or ride through it in any style, and if a complaint were made to the sheriff or court, there would be no protection forthcoming. Because the people have as much right to go on a protection strike against a tax striker as a person has the right to become a tax striker. The fact is, that if it were not for protection and past laws obeyed, Dr. Shaw could never have saved any money nor own any property because we would then be in a state of rebellion. I wonder if suffragettes have brains enough to understand this!

I do not know nor care how easy and sleepy they are over in London with their suffragettes, but here in the United States some people are always fully awake.

Digitized by Google

A few women and men detectives sent into the suffragettes' field will soon teach them to obey the existing laws as they are now, and to wait sensibly and peacefully until the time arrives when they may or may not use their own.

Besides United States, U. S. means us-selves, and if the suffragettes start something over here a la England style, they will find themselves in more trouble than they have bargained for. They had better learn to raise crops of food or fruit than trouble. By this latter method they will win and gain, but through the former they will always lose even if they did win.

If socialism would have any true or important value to itself, everybody in the United States or in the world would become a socialist in a year's time. For it is as easy to vote the socialistic ticket as any other ticket, and I myself did it while studying its principles. As I ran for alderman on the socialistic ticket in Denver, Colorado, a few years ago, it proves that I was honest and sincere. I kept up the search for its possibilities and traced things back so deeply that few socialists ever touched so deep a spot. Even Karl Marx never thought of it. I dug into the subject deeper than Jack London and other modern socialists did, and, as I paid for my own lessons and trouble, not with the intention of making any money out of the socialist party, I discovered that socialism is impossible and impracticable. It will be a complete failure even if tried out; the same as religions are or suffragism is. And I therefore say good-by to socialism forever.

The intelligent, well-meaning, and respectable citizen, whether a socialist or not, must bear in mind that a government operating for the people and by the people at the same time, is no more possible than you can pick yourself off the floor by pulling both legs with both hands at the same time. You will find that it is

Digitized by Google

possible to pull off the floor only one leg at a time and not the two. The only person capable of getting off the floor with both feet is the acrobat, and you know the best acrobat in the world cannot keep off the floor more than a few seconds at a time; and, too, while he is in the air he has lost all power to perform any duty or work on the floor! So it is, my dear socialist, with governments. Only one method at a time will work successfully, if you please! In Europe, where a king rules, you have a government for the people. In this great United States and in some parts of Europe, we have a president who represents the people, meaning a government by the people. It is impossible to make any other method work, or to improve on the one we already have, until we raise a better grade of men.

The wise socialist who reads these words may now take a hint and save himself further trouble in wasting time and money in spreading the cause of socialism, for there will never be socialism. Socialists who have money and time to spare will do well by building up laboratories, inventing-buildings, and private schools for the advancement of self, children, and humanity at large. Socialists and other people of the same class will find that by getting to work on actual things a great good will eventually be the result; but nothing will be accomplished by wasting time and money in preaching socialism or other impossibilities. The socialist party, if it ever becomes a power, will, like the Democratic or other minor parties, ruin a people and government.

The United States government, though young in years, has accomplished more wonders than all the European governments have with many more people in thousands of years. This is because of freedom from government rule and interference. We, therefore, cannot, must not, and will not trust all knowledge to a few socialistic officials, nor even to the best-minded

Digitized by Google

president or public officials, not socialists. For as soon as these men would get to know the inside knowledge or the secret of all industries and manufacture in general, they would at once change their method of thinking and become our tyrants like some of the old kings did in former days. A word to the wise is sufficient.

The socialist must learn that the less government rule there is mixed in between humanity, the better it is for humanity at large. If we would all become socialists, we would all be asking for jobs; and who would furnish us with any! If everybody in the world were a socialist, and we would all have arrangements for getting three dollars a day or two dollars a day for working in a sewer, sweeping streets, and building houses, who in the world would ever care to bother his head or brain about becoming a weaver, a stenographer, an engineer, a good watchmaker, or a great mechanic! Skilled work is done through brain as well as with body, and, as the brain of man is about the laziest piece of ingenious matter the world has or knows of, all skilled work and better life would soon cease.

If you feed the stomach fully, your brain will not invent, create, nor work; for this is the law of nature. As soon as the brain stops working the entire body stops working, too. As socialists, we would all be looking to the next nobody or nothing to furnish us with jobs at two dollars a day, rather than invent. We would therefore fall back to a life of savagery as of old or as is being lived in Europe by most of the people at present. If people care to lead a lazy life all they have to do is to go down South. There are plenty fishing places there. A man can always catch a few fish a day and live on them, and if he likes that kind of a life he is welcome to it. I was down there and made a study of conditions and people who lead the lazy life, but was glad indeed to get away and to work again. Let each socialist and suffragette, therefore, im-

Digitized by Google

prove himself and herself away from politics and laws altogether, and all things will improve through them.

I will admit that there is plenty room for improvement in the present mismanagement of our government, but unless some well-to-do people including socialists offer their time and serve the government without compensation, there is no need of expecting any relief from the present ignorant and money-mad politicians and officials, no matter what party they may come from, old or new. They all act the same if once they reach the public money barrel.

A certain poor man became governor of one of the greatest states in the world, which is the State of New York. A salary of about a thousand dollars a month was paid to said poor man for his time and services. Said governor allowed a foreigner or unnaturalized citizen to act as his private secretary and also appointed him to a state position paying a yearly salary of four thousand dollars, which is against the law of said state. Said foreigner was allowed to receive money from citizens or others, and to spend and misuse it in any style he pleased for himself and the governor. After nine months of misrule, the governor was impeached. He tried to put the blame for all his misdoings upon his wife, but this is no excuse in law. Not being pleased at the prospect of becoming poor again, the governor refused to give up the state capitol to the people who had entrusted him with it. A second trial at a great expense was forced upon the people, and this time he did send the real foreigner to swear before all the people of the state that it was true that the governor broke his oath and the laws of the state. A second and final court order to vacate the state capitol was naturally the result. When the governor packed his grip to leave the state capitol he stated that he was poorer than ever. He declared through the newspapers that he was in debt to the amount of over seventy-six thousand dollars.

Digitized by Google

Think of it! A poor lawyer or individual allowing himself to get into a debt of over seventy-six thousand dollars in a few months time while at the same time drawing a salary of about a thousand dollars a month! And all for the benefit of the poor people! You know! Yet, when said impeached law-breaking governor arrived at home, a great number of unintelligent citizens went to the trouble of presenting him with a silver loving-cup for his great deed of law breaking! They also placed the same poor man back into politics and a city position again so that he may do the same thing over again but naturally in a worse style. Oh, decency and intelligence, go and hide thy face for at least a few years longer! The above is one of many true stories showing misdeeds of modern politicians and officials, and also showing the unintelligent actions of our modern and ignorant citizens who put the dirt back into the clean place as fast as it is cleaned.

While a few honest politicians work for honesty, a hundred around them work for deception regardless of name or party. Putting Democrats, socialists, suffragettes, or Progressives into office will not improve conditions but will make them worse.

The flying-machine, when perfected so as to carry freight between Europe and the United States, will be a great relief to humanity at large. Valuable goods will then be smuggled constantly regardless of laws. It will therefore cause all governments to do away with the tariff, and if the tariff is once done away with throughout the world, there will be nothing left for government officials to prey or graft upon but themselves. We will then have the true cure for all grafting and disturbing evils that now exist in politics, and the whole world will become one true and honest government.

A government taxing corporations, trusts, and individuals for carrying on their business, causes great harm to society at large. For each corporation, trust,

Digitized by Google

or individual is obliged to advance prices on all goods in order to pay a useless tax. All money that rushes into a government's coffers is divided, wasted, or spoiled by a lot of politicians who do not work for it and are not entitled to it.

It is not just to take away from the rich who already have riches and hand it over to political, state, or government officials through an income tax law; for such law will force the tax collectors to rob the poorest of the poor after they have taken away everything from the rich.

Through many or a few rich men we can all enjoy more freedom and grow upwards, but through a government-ridden and taxing method the rich in cash and brains are forced out of the country; and remember, when the rich leave the country, there is no more hope for the poor to even talk about riches, and much less of getting any from government officials. So has it always been in Europe, and so will it always be elsewhere under such method.

When the rich man and the manufacturer has to waste time in writing out statements to a government as to how much profit they made during the year and to send in part of it as an income tax, two dangerous things happen to that government and country. The rich man invests no more money in such a country, and the manufacturer is at once obliged to advance the price of his commodity; and when you or I go to buy the article, we have to pay the higher price for it and suffer, the fault being all our own for allowing such useless laws to be passed.

A manufacturer or a rich man is not a mint. He simply saved his money while others did the spending, and when a person has learned the art of saving, no law in the world can keep him down. If the law tries to keep him down, then all work ceases until they let him free, for, without his action, there can be no work

Digitized by Google

nor pay for the less competent nor even for the government itself; for it reacts upon the government just as it would react upon a child who accidentally or intentionally locked its parents in a room; the child would in the meantime suffer hunger and eventually death.

Here is what a man has to figure against to-day if he wishes to become a manufacturer in the United States: A Union Lazy Leader to dictate wages for incompetent workers; suffragettes complaining the price of his commodity is too high; city and state tax; and on top of that a Federal Income Tax; then Federal interference whether it is a trust or not; a Democratic administration lowering the tariff on goods so the manufacturer in Europe can keep busy while the one here has to shut down; and if a few out of the many manufacturers get rich for putting up with all the above useless and killing trouble then all the people and ignorant government officials call it, trust, and dissolve it, and we have nothing left to do anything with! How would you love to become a manufacturer under such conditions? Can a country prosper or develop under such an insane political system!

A manufacturer is greater than all. It is he who pays and feeds his help, whether there is anything left for himself or not. It is he who is obliged to feed and satisfy his workers. It is he who must satisfy a selling force and a buying public. It is he who must face the cold world alone. There is no one to assist him but everyone against him in every move he makes. He is not like a president or other office holder who are well paid whether they make mistakes or not. He suffers and pays for every mistake he makes. There is, therefore, no one greater than the manufacturer because he originates, creates, makes, feeds, and supplies, regardless of his own returns.

It is whenever the originators and manufacturers feel like manufacturing that keeps the workers alive and

Digitized by Google

makes some of them rich, and not as the ignorant imagine that the workers make the manufacturers rich; for it is a fact that whenever a manufacturer stops acting, many people stop working and earning.

Always remember that of imitators and laborers we have more than too many, but of originators and manufacturers always too few.

It is impossible for working people or a government to become manufacturers because it takes more than a salary-brained person to originate and run things right along safely.

It is a government's duty and especially a republic's, if it desires to be an ideal and perfect one, to build up a good army and navy, and have plenty of battleships on hand to protect against foreign invasion. It is also a government's duty to protect its own people from internal dissensions such as strikes, riots, rebellions, etc. Other than this it should not interfere. Holding down a good man, corporation, or trust from doing great work while weak and imitating people do nothing at all, does no one any good. A small and imitating person or corporation cannot accomplish great things for they do not aim at such.

There are always two grades of manufacturers; one is the originating and creating kind, and the other is the imitating kind. In modern days the imitator likes to have the government step in, through the Sherman Anti-Trust Law, to stop the big originator from working and hold him down so the little imitator can do a little work. However, this is no remedy, and no government or republic should interfere in such affairs. When a person starts out to accomplish great things, he as a rule does it, and when a manufacturer has brought a certain article up to perfection it is the end. By letting a lot of incompetent fellows in as competitors, does no one any good because the originator can always do the work better and forces right ahead for other and better

Digitized by Google

things, while the imitator remains stationary or goes backward even with the best thing.

My advice to all small manufacturers and imitators is that henceforth use your energy in designing new articles and inventions instead of wasting your time in imitating others. There will always be a demand for more improved articles and there will always be plenty of room somewhere in the world for more new big trusts.

Put the trusts out of business and you stop the achievement of the world's greatest and biggest undertakings, thereby halting all progress.

Investigating trusts and troubling them about their own private affairs causes them to advance prices thereafter, in order to pay for the time, trouble, and money expended in hiring lawyers to answer foolish fools' questions, which will never be answered.

Put the trusts out of business or trouble them much, and all industry will be put to a stand-still, or else will be moved away to other countries, and the United States will suffer thereby.

Divide a large trust and give me part of it and a thousand others parts of it, and we would become just as mean or just as good as one large trust is. So what is the difference?

Let a government take over a trust that needs some creating brains behind it to run it, and the entire industry would fall to pieces or would go to ruin in less than twenty years.

A government can run a post-office department easily enough, because it does not take extraordinary intelligence to be an expressman. If a man will deliver you a big trunk for twenty-five cents from the station to your hotel, it therefore takes no extraordinary brains to deliver your light letter or parcel from one street to another or from one country to another, when the address is written out correctly.

Digitized by Google

As soon as we learn to develop a better class of people, we will be able to have a correspondingly better form of government and conditions. Until then it is best to let the trusts or other individuals develop everything possible.

The trusts are not one-tenth as bad as they are pictured by muckrakers, ignorant pen-pushers of newspapers, or by socialists.

Taking as deep a look into the trusts as I have, I found that they are doing great things for this country and its population at large. The loads they carry would crush some of the kings of Europe, if they tried to imitate them mentally or otherwise; and if we had socialism, suffragism, or government ownership, we could not even begin to try to imitate them, because we would not know how to begin.

Not all things nor all wealth is taken from the earth or produced by or through nature as most of the socialists, students of economy, or other people imagine. Brass or steel, for instance, does not come direct from the earth, for the earth has never in the history of the world grown one ounce of brass. Yet brass is made by and through men and sold for a few cents a pound, and so is steel. And if the twenty thousand steel workers in one plant and many brass workers in another plant are not able to discover how steel or brass is made, although working and making millions of tons of steel and brass yearly, how in the world is socialism or any other outside person going to know how to make it! Can you not understand that as soon as any or all of the twenty thousand steel workers discover the secret of steel or brass making, they would at once resign their two dollar a day positions and form a trust of their own and begin making steel or brass, or else would become partners to the present trusts! But you see, it is not known to all men how things are done although they actually do them, and not all things are written in books so you

Digitized by Google

or I could get the knowledge of how to do them easily Men who possess the secret knowledge of manufacture or other things will not tell nor sell you the secret for all the cash in the world. You, or a government, therefore, can never get it. It is for this reason that socialism, suffragism, or government ownership can never be a success. In other words, all utopian ideas are absolutely worthless as far as the advancement of humanity is concerned, for it is a case of perfect individuality and nothing else.

A government can only run a post-office, a railroad, and some other few things, but it will never be able to run all things unless it wants us to fall back into savagery again.

It is not true that the rich live on the poor. If all the rich and the manufacturers would go on a strike the same as a union does, the poor, the people, and even the government would starve to death.

It takes brains, besides capital, or labor, to make a success of things.

If laborers were paid twenty dollars per day for work, the saloons, the underworld, and the gambling houses would reap the benefit, not the working man, woman, boy or girl. I know this to be a fact, because I worked, earned, saved, and made my little money through hard work in factories and therefore know what is going on.

My advice to all working people is this: As soon as you have mastered one trade well, branch right out and learn the next higher and harder one, and you will be something some day.

Never waste your evenings in pool rooms, saloons, gambling or other gay houses. Start in now to save what little you can for a rainy day. Choose the oldest savings bank in your place and take but three or four per cent on your savings, or better still, use the Postal Savings Department and take but two per cent.

Digitized by Google

Never invest your money or buy stocks of any kind unless you can handle your own money and be the president of the company. The only money that has ever done me any good in all my life is the money that I kept at an old bank at three per cent and the money I still have at two per cent. All other money that I invested in different companies throughout the United States is absolutely lost forever.

Never marry until late years; and not at all, unless you have over a thousand dollars saved in the bank. Never have a child afterward unless you have a thousand dollars ready to take care of the child with, or to put it on its feet. Never have a second child until you have seen and learned that the first is doing well.

Always work sincerely and well at the work you are at, because it means you are learning as well as earning.

Never tell others to go on a strike for more pay, because all goods will afterward advance and you will have no more than you had before.

Never fear to go to work as a scab if you see the mill is running two or three days with scabs. As one of the six thousand strikers who went out on a strike in 1897-8 in Providence, R. I., I was asked to go back to work as a scab, but feared to do so. The result is I am still on strike and lost a lifetime's job, while the mill is still running with scabs. The promise I got from the leader of the American Federation of Labor, that we were surely going to win the strike if we only stay out and not scab, has not materialized as yet, and never will!

Each person in the world is a consumer and a producer at the same time; some consume more than they produce, and others produce more than they consume. A government, too, is a producer and consumer at the same time. As a government could not become a government unless so ordered through the people of that community; and as a government's business is taxing its

Digitized by Google

own people in order that said government may exist, you will therefore see that it is a waste of time in waiting and hoping for a government to send us happiness, jobs, or money. It is in reality ourselves who work and pay over to the government money so it may pay the salary of all officials who work for us!

Whenever you hear a would-be president promising you wonders before election, know that he is either talking childishly or indirectly deceiving you and himself. Because, whenever a president is furnished by the people with the best table board in the White House, and about two hundred dollars a day pocket or spending money besides, he can do very little indeed for that community. If it were possible for a president to do wonders, he would be wasting his time for the good of humanity without compensation. I never heard of such a happening before; and if it should ever occur in the future, it would in all cases be a new idea. What I say about a would-be president holds good about all other officials downward. So be wise and SMILE!

There is competition between governments the same as there is between individuals. As you will notice, the government that can produce a better class of people than just a Hog and Cattle eating and Hog and Cattle raising people gets a higher standing value throughout the world, and the United States alone has that high standing value, and it will go higher yet. But this comes about only through individual perfection and efficiency, and not through the assistance of laws, governments, or officials.

Know, that as soon as a person is sure of a lifetime's position either with a government or otherwise, just that soon does that individual begin to go down to the road of uselessness because he does not have to strive for anything further or better.

Whenever a government passes an old age pension bill for its people, it means that that government has

Digitized by Google

assigned itself toward destruction and death because its people will do no work when young and will not have to do any when advanced in years. After fifty years of a pension paying system nobody will care to work, and as a result nobody will be able to pay the pensions; consequently ruination and death of people, government and all.

Some foolish people seem to imagine that a government does nothing more than just coin and stamp money and hand it over to some few men, which is not true. A government dares not and does not coin a penny nor print a thousand dollar bill unless its citizens bring gold, silver, or copper, and pay the government for the trouble and labor expended of coining it into money.

Behind each new dollar coined there is new and fresh value of nature, brains, capital, and labor, the same as there is new flour, labor, capital, and brains behind each fresh loaf of bread.

If you own a loaf of bread, you do not have to pray or have faith about getting one, do you? So is it with a dollar. When you are the owner of one you will always be able to buy something with it. A dollar is not a preacher who promises words without a signature. You, therefore, need no faith whenever you are the owner or possessor of an honest dollar.

Each and every government watches one another much more carefully as to what is behind its dollars than you watch your grocer not to cheat you in weight when you buy five pounds of sugar. If this were not so, a government would be like socialism, or rather more of a mud-pie making affair than a government.

A Modern Riddle

If the socialists and suffragettes would become successful in taking over our government and pass new and

Digitized by Google

good laws for us hourly or daily, it would not be possible for us to make use of even one of those good laws once in twenty years' time, because it would keep all of us more than busy, working and sweating to pay printers and stenographers to write those good laws on paper, and it would also keep us more than busy furnishing salaries and feeding a great number of useless socialists and suffragettes who do nothing but vote and pass good laws for us, but which none of us can use, enforce, or enjoy! If the above is a fact, and it is, how in the world is socialism or suffragism going to improve our conditions or do us any good! And at least but not last, would we not all have a perfect right to stop working altogether and become law passers, too? I mean all of us to do nothing else all the time but vote and pass good laws for the benefit of ??????? !!! ???!!!???

A London suffragette, arriving in New York, claims that the suffragettes have over a thousand more riddles and ideas like the above to let loose on us, but that they hold them back as a valuable secret and will positively not tell us what their nature is until they get hold of our government, which means of us. So the reader may now understand that there are good times coming toward us, if we just wait! And all things come to those who wait! I just cannot tell you how long to wait, though! Women, you know, change their minds so quickly! Their next change may be a desire to be Women Strobers. Who can tell? Then the above riddles would dissolve themselves awayeth as they cameth.

If a young man or woman cannot save enough money out of a small salary, between the age of fifteen and forty, so it will help them toward greater things thereafter, it shows that there is or has been something wrong going on in that individual for a long time.

People who do nothing but eat, talk, and believe, are the very ones who have to do all the working, kicking, and complaining.

Digitized by Google

Money cannot buy happiness but thought can; and it costs you nothing to make your brain furnish you happiness any moment you desire it.

Never talk or advertise your troubles or complaints. You can heal or repair them in less time than it takes to tell them.

If it is eternal happiness you desire, create it yourself through your brain and you will have it.

Know that it is as easy and feels better to work, sing, and enjoy while living and working, than it is to knock, kick, and complain while working and living. The singing method will eventually build you greater and upward, while the knocking and complaining method will eventually put you down and awaywards.

If your or mine grandfather was busy all his lifetime praying and building churches while a present rich man's grandfather was busy inventing new things to uplift humanity, mentally and physically, there is no wonder then that you and I were born poor. At least I was.

It is not a God, king, president, people, government, or the world who owe us a living; it is our parents who owe us that. If we have grown to a stage when we can understand that our parents' mistakes are our punishment, it is our duty to improve ourselves immediately without harming any other person, companies, trusts, presidents, or kings.

Who in your estimation is a better and greater God to humanity; the one unseen who causes many horrors and wrecks on the ocean, or Mr. Marconi, the inventor of the wireless telegraph which causes the saving of many human lives on the ocean from the so-called unseen God? Yet Mr. Marconi does not consider himself a God.

Digitized by Google

Special Inside Information to True Believers

To all those who believe everything they hear, or misunderstand everything they read! Listen! The reason nobody has seen any more of God after he left Moses on the mount is because when God started back on his trip home to heaven, he was accidentally caught between two lightnings and one thunder, and was instantly destroyed! It is for this reason we will see no more of God! Never! If you will read the above words with the same feeling and understanding that you read the Bible (or as you listen to your preacher), you will find the above just as truthful as the words from your preacher or in the Bible.

All things in the universe work and operate in two ways or forms. One is positive and the other is negative, and therefore makes all things work back and forth. As you notice, a thing first grows and matures and immediately after begins to be destroyed by the very nature that made and grew it. The human being, if he learns the running of nature, has the power to put a check upon himself and against blind nature and thereby protects himself against death or destruction. This is easily done through the brain if you understand how to think in a positive and negative form.

People living under set rules laid down by their ancestors and forefathers are simply destroying themselves by allowing themselves to think one set way only; for that kind of living and thinking is being half-alive only, and finally kills.

Know and understand that nothing and nobody in the universe can help you up to true satisfaction better than you can yourself, because everything else and everybody else is busy with its own self in building and keeping itself together and working toward upward growth, the same as you are constantly trying and doing.

Digitized by Google

Make it your business to see and know things real; not to imagine or believe in things which are not real.

The words pray, believe, death, wrong imagination, hate, love, fear, and the thoughts and actions behind them have killed and are killing more human beings than wars do. So watch out and save yourself.

Well-meaning but ignorant parents are killing their own offsprings, when they force their wrong and false orthodox ideas and thoughts upon their offsprings.

Do not allow yourself to imagine that you know it all to-day. You will discover that you will learn something different and greater to-morrow; and that will be heaps less than what you will know and learn in a year or two henceforth.

All things that we see in nature are not a blessing because they are in existence with us. For instance, if there were no snakes, rats, dogs, cats, or elephants, we could get along well without them. If there were no sun, no moon, no apples, no oranges, nor wheat, we would manage to live just as happily without them as with them. We therefore owe no one in particular any special thanks because some or a great many things are here and with us as they are.

Whether there is another universe like ours existing in space no one can tell. There may not be another universe like ours and there may be millions of them. But it is an absolute waste of time and energy to think about such possibilities until we make a flying machine that will carry us through the moon and sun's orbits and find out for ourselves. In the meantime it is best to attend to our own affairs right here on this earth. Let us stop dreaming about other worlds and perfect ourselves and this world first.

The distance from the earth to the moon's orbit is claimed to be about a quarter of a million miles. The distance from the earth to the sun's orbit is over ninety million miles, and to measure the distance beyond the

Digitized by Google

sun's orbit we have no instruments as yet. Therefore, learn to know of a great many things and about all things natural, but also learn to abstain from most of them and use but few of them as you need them, and the world is yours without any harm or injury to anyone else or anything else.

Digitized by Google

GENERAL FORETHOUGHT

In this day it is both customary and right that those who discover something new in any line, no matter if it be mechanical or psychological, to give the product to the world for the benefit of humanity. If it be a machine, it is placed on the market as such to show the purchaser how he may save both time and money by its use. If it be an idea or a combination of ideas, it is put into book form for the public to read or study; and if the author's work be worthy and true, it then follows that such an author has done a great work for humanity. Because every reader will observe his ideas and will follow them, advancing to a greater point of efficiency than before by proving his intelligence to imbibe them.

My purpose in giving this book to the public is to assist the reader to develop his brain as well as his body to that point of self-efficiency that will enable him to stand alone and thus find for himself a certain strength, beauty, and purpose that he little dreams of now.

The ignorance of the masses and classes relative to the meaning of the words STAND ALONE, is so great, it is overwhelming. None can realize how fearfully so, except those who have found the true and significant order of the phrase. Since the joy of it has come to me, I shall explain simply and clearly in common everyday language to others, how they, too, may find the knowledge of its understanding, and become as those who are in possession of its greatness.

It is true that thousands of books have been written

Digitized by Google

for the supposed advancement of mankind, but in most cases they were and are full of half-baked thoughts and bad to digest; while in others they are too much baked or burned, and no reader could ever make use of such; consequently the writers and readers did not accomplish much.

The majority of writers in the past have written either for the mental uplift alone, or the physical. To uplift the mind at the expense of the body, as in overfeeding or physical culture, will eventually put both out of service; while to strengthen and regrow the body at the expense of the mind, as in praying or imagining alone, will profit little. A uniform understanding of body and brain at the same time and at all times can insure complete success to the individual, not otherwise.

Improvement in the human race can only be through individual efficiency, and individual efficiency cannot be attained until men and women, through mind-efficiency, study the value of certain laws of nature. When this knowledge comes to them, and they strive through them, then do they become a power eternally, and humanity as a whole advances upward.

There are two classes of people in this world who are continually waging war one with another relative to their beliefs or non-beliefs, with respect to their religious views. They are the scientists and the preachers. The former have made their claims understood, that if anything is to be accomplished in this world it must be done through human efficiency and actualities and that human perfection can only be brought about by and through individual effort, actual deeds, and accomplishments. The preachers, on the other hand, no matter to what denomination they belong, maintain that all things that have been done or are going to be done in this world, has been or will be done by some unexplainable or indescribable agency they call God; which means no reality, no truth, no actualities, no facts, and

Digitized by Google

consequently no accomplishments. For their authority they take a book called the Bible, a compilation of ancient Hebrew and Gentile writings which have been handed down from one generation to another and which same have served to found all the religions of to-day.

Personally, I have listened to both sides of the question and I have found that the scientists are the ones who set forth the true and reasonable views from every standpoint. Their knowledge is based upon facts that cannot be disputed, since the truth of their argument is right before the eyes of those who will see what they will to see.

It is my purpose in this book to prove to you that the first Hebrew writing, namely, Genesis or the Torah contains the key that unlocks the gate of life, that all may pass through and learn what life means and is. This same writing, so imperfectly translated and misunderstood, has the greatest richness of language thought of any in the world. So rich and fine is it, that in it there is a treasure, the knowledge and profundity of which is so limitless that all will want to possess it if they wish to enjoy everlasting life on earth. When this knowledge becomes widely known, there will be no need of preachers or churches. Every man will be a God unto himself, for he will have learned to STAND ALONE. To do this, means a common sense way of looking at and learning certain things in nature, eliminating superstition, untruth, and all fear from the system. By these means only, can the earthly life eternal be proven. MAN becomes SUPER-MAN!

In order to bring about this happy state of affairs, I am interested in helping the young men and women of to-day to a better understanding of this meaning of life from a natural standpoint. The message I am sending out to the world is for both old and young; the ones who are developed in mind, as well as those who are not. Those who are matured in thought must try and

Digitized by Google

see their mistakes in holding to the orthodox ideas of life. Such ideas are killing the human race every day.

This book is for both Jew and Gentile; for the believer as well as for the non-believer; for the hod-carrier as well as the university professor; the sewer digger as also the king, and for the poor as well as the rich. It is a message for all, who, through profound study, will acquire much knowledge; knowledge that shall give them the power to become all within themselves, and through this same power, this same world will become a different world to the individual: a world of beauty, greatness and happiness unto self, everything, everybody and all.

Digitized by Google

As a Chick Groweth and
Slumbereth for Days in an Egg Shell,
So Did Humanity Grow,
Slumber and Die for Thousands of Years;
YES, perhaps Millions of Years!

In Order that the Chick May Gain More Life,
It Picks Through the Shell; and
Breaks and Smashes up the Very Structure
That Made the Life of It Possible.

So Also Must Humanity Break Through, and
Smash up All False Beliefs, Superstitions, and
Thoughts about Death or a Hereafter.

Take a Peep Out, Like the Chick,
Into the Natural and Perpetual
Workings of the Universe:
ARISE! OUT OF YOUR SLUMBERS, I SAY!
Let your Brain Know How to Imitate Nature, and
EVERLASTING LIFE WILL BE YOURS!

Digitized by Google

PART ONE

ANCIENT HISTORY AND MODERN THOUGHT

True Facts about the Bibles, and the words Angel, Lord, Deity, Jehovah God, Revealed.

ALL work that was ever done in this world, physically or mentally, was so done first through a thought or combination of thoughts created by a man; other people finding the good in them, followed these thoughts and imitated them. This is the reason we have so few originators and so many IMITATORS!

The human race has heretofore passed through much darkness and hardship to acquire any kind of knowledge that would lead it to the road of efficiency. Much time and pleasure have been lost, and needlessly so; for when we learn to enjoy the truths of all things, we make heaven here on this planet while we live. We do not waste money, time, and energy, planning for a so-called or miscalled dead hereafter.

When we look backward, we find much has been accomplished and we realize that with greater mental development and care of the human body, far greater things will be brought about in the future. As the evolution of the wheel-barrow proves itself, so does it further illustrate all other forms of evolution. When we think of ancient times and the time of to-day, we see what a multitude of inventions have been gradually created through the ingenuity of man. Take the matter of roadcraft alone: from a wheel-barrow to an auto; a crude hand-made sail boat to a steamship of incomparability, and a subway to a flying-machine. While as for the legion of labor-saving devices, they compel us to

Digitized by Google

say, what a wonderful world men have changed this world into! And to-day is the richest era of all times to live in. So marvelous is it, that it seems as if anyone, who will develop his brain to its utmost, may devise great things for the welfare of self and humanity. All these improvements: mental, moral, physical, and social, have been brought about first through the means of thoughts, and afterwards have been put forth in evidence materially and mechanically.

When I began to think, even as a child, I could never understand why it was that my parents and immediate family as well as other good families around us suffered considerably although they were and are regular church goers who pray and read the bible daily; yet, with all their sincerity, they have made no progress and have more trouble on their hands than people who do not indulge in such things. I became suspicious and decided to search into all religious creeds and bibles to see how they originated, what there was in them, and what they really contain. After considerable study, hardship, and travel, and with a great deal of patience I have at last discovered all, and also found the key to the Torah as well as to the book the Gentile or Christian calls his Bible, the explanation of which will be found in this volume. In it the reader will find all that is necessary for him to study; for in my system of brain, mind, and body development, man proves himself gradually and in time rids himself of that fear, the fear of ignorance, which is the bane of our existence and which has heretofore retarded his progress in life. He will have no occasion to seek minds or things other than his own, to mature his self-development.

To get the desired information I was naturally obliged to search into ancient writings, and most of such I found in the public library on Fifth Avenue, New York City. In going over some of these ancient writings I found amongst them many ideas that were remarkable.

Digitized by Google

In those writings I found more valuable hints relative to true life and invention than all modern books the world possesses to-day. The ancients, having no schools for learning, nor bibles or books to get misknowledge from, used their eyes to develop their brains, and, at times, their brains and minds without eyes observed nature in a way that few do to-day. The consequences were that those who read between the lines of nature's laws and who practiced them for the true living of the advancing life, gave of their knowledge to their neighbors. In this way did all true and natural living spread to this day.

That many of these people made a success of their lives is proven by the records at this date. These same records prove beyond a doubt, that as far as modern inventions go, the ancients had the original ideas. Furthermore, the result of their brain forces, now extant, proves that the builders of same held some power within themselves that enabled them to direct their brains naturally and superhumanly. Yet, in their work, these wise men of the past made no quicker progress than we are making for the reason that they had to encounter obstacles, the same as we are surrounded with to-day. Their obstacles were a superstitious, religion-following-warring people, while our modern obstacles are unionism, socialism, and a suffragism-following-warring people. This new class of followers possesses a new kind of superstition and ignorance: it is an ignorance that knows nothing beyond what it sees; an ignorance that observes everything but tries not to understand anything; and an ignorance that stoutly refuses to be educated! It seems that this class does not want to understand that a government cannot help them out of trouble, because as soon as a person becomes a government employee he obeys orders and is dictated to, instead of being the creator or dictator himself. Again, the best inventing and creating-brained person in the

Digitized by Google

world is independent and will never work for a government not even if he were offered a salary of a million dollars monthly; therefore, no relief can ever come to them from a government source. Laws passed by ignorant men and women, through a more or less number of votes, will never relieve their troubles else they would have no troubles now, for that is the very state we are in now. Through strikes there can come no relief for them because all commodities must advance in proportion accordingly, and they gain nothing thereby. Though they do not want to see it, the fact is, they strike and make trouble against themselves, and it is they themselves who have to pay for it and suffer. Knowledge alone can help them out of darkness and trouble, not strikes, dollars, laws, nor votes. The faster they will peaceably assist progress in invention for a while, the faster will we reach the light and free road. We cannot reach it as fast by striking at and pulling the few back who are paving the way of progress for us ever since the days of old.

Searching for information as to how languages and bibles came about, I was thrown clear back to Hebrew; in other words, Hebrew writings are the only writings of value the world possesses at this day. It is in them that the sum and substance of what we ought to know will be found; for those writings were the first and are the oldest makers of original education, history, and perfection, of and in the world, down to this day.

In searching for their origin, I discovered that some authorities in ancient history claim that a Sumerian tribe of people existed twenty or twenty-eight thousand years ago; others say that the same tribe flourished about fifteen thousand years ago. Be this as it may, the actual date matters little. It is not the past we are working for, except as it will shed light on the present. We are further told that a Babylonian race, co-existent with the Sumerians, gathered all the ideas of communication

Digitized by Google

the Sumerian tribe had, one with another, and from them developed their minds to such an extent that their commercial interests also developed to a wonderful point. Their means of conveying news or exchanging thoughts with one another in writing was by pictures or drawings made in this fashion: an illustration of a hand meant a hand; a foot, a foot; a man, a man; a bird, a bird; and so on. This system was crude, confusing, and slow, for the reason that a person was obliged to be somewhat of a picture-drawer, sign painter and whatnot, before he could turn out a letter. However, the city of Babylon grew and its people developed rapidly, and this state of semi-civilization continued for thousands of years. Then came its destruction. But before this happened, history tells us that some Egyptians, Assyrians, and Chaldeans were engaged in devising new methods of writing. They were evolving an alphabetical form to take the place of the slow, pictorial, or hieroglyphic style.

The Hebrews took over a few of the raw letters from the above mentioned but vanishing tribes; originated, invented, and added to them until a complete alphabet of twenty-two letters was made, and the same is in this day. This alphabet is in itself a wonderful piece of work. Each letter represents a certain sound of speech: it defines a certain part of a man's body; an animal; a fish; some part of nature; a building, or a kind of material; it also stands for secret and shorthand writing; in fact, anything and everything in the universe can be thought out from a glance at one or a combination of two of these Hebraic symbols. The letters were afterwards combined and formed into words; the words were then made to define and represent things and thought; and, too, ideas and thoughts were in turn designed to fit words and letters. In those days writing was done on clay tablets, on stone, or carved into brass plates. No writing paper was then known; con-

Digitized by Google

sequently an alphabet and language had to be designed rich in thought but to take up very little space; for space or a material to write on was then scarcer than gold dollars are to-day.

You can take any one letter out of the Hebrew alphabet and spread its thoughts of meaning and you will have sufficient words to write a large book on true science; and as you write it you will discover still more thoughts and ideas about actual, mechanical, and mental development and advancement. How many men or rather how few men make the effort to reach the very height in the Hebrew language? But few indeed. Any true student of the Hebrew language will tell you that the longer he studies it the more wonderful does he find it. Its opportunities for affording self-development are so rich and varied, no words can express the fullness of the same. By a careful and self-educating method in finding out what each letter of the alphabet means and stands for, there is unfolded a process of self-development, that no other form of education yields. The process produces a system of concentration and expansion in the brain, which in turn creates thoughts from thoughts, and a wealth of new ideas spring into existence that were unknown before to the individual.

The Hebrew language is an exact counterpart of the universe, and like the universe, laid out richly. The men of ancient times knew well enough that at some future time, science and invention would reach a point whereby every individual would be afforded opportunities and knowledge for the making of himself a strong and good person if he or she wished; and so they gave to the world sufficient food for thought in their writings to last humanity for all time. Study it as you may and as long as you will, you will always find something new and instructive in it. It is a language that makes you think, whether you read one letter or a word. Let us take for example the letter "A," which is pronounced

Digitized by Google

in Hebrew "aleph." In Hebrew it stands for "A," also for the figure "one"; a dot over this means one-thousand; it likewise stands for the first of a thing and many other quantities. Take again, the letter "B," pronounced "Beth or Baze," means "B"; the figure "2"; also the second of a thing; an institution; a building, and many other things. Suppose we put the two letters A and B together in English, and what have we? The sound "ab," which is practically meaningless. But in Hebrew A and B together is pronounced "ov." "Ov" means a certain month of the year (Jewish); it also signifies a root, nature, universe, ancestor, author, originator, teacher, inventor, and also father, meaning anyone's father. The Hebrews always use the term "father nature," while the Gentile, "mother nature."

All our civilized languages at the present day, in writing or speaking, are all babies of Hebrew, and Hebrew is the papa and father above, and of them all. Hebrew is first; Greek, which is stolen and twisted Hebrew, came about three thousand years later; Latin, which is a grandchild of Hebrew, good or bad, came third, etc. The Hebrew alphabet stands alone by itself, pure, and will so remain forever, yet, it is in and purifies all others, for without Hebrew there would have been none other because there were no others as good. There is not a civilized language in the world to-day but what contains Hebrew words in them while speaking or writing it without the person being aware of it. For example, the word "he," which was created by the ancient Hebrews, thousands of years ago, is now used in English and has the identical sound and meaning as invented by the Hebrews. Since Hebrew became Hebrew all others get mixed, change, and disappear as time goes on, but Hebrew exists and operates the same always. It has no equal and will have no equal because it was designed and made true and perfect when invented. All others confuse and destroy, while Hebrew creates,

Digitized by Google

builds, and holds, and will at last as at first, save the good human race.

Since Hebrew is so expansive it naturally follows that the words with their varied meanings are a puzzle to many. There are few Jews to-day, not even the most educated rabbis, who understand it. It is too difficult for them. And, too, there is a vast difference between the language of Hebrew and that of the Jewish. Few will take the trouble to dip into the profundity of the former and in consequence the wealth of knowledge the Hebraic writings possess is lost to the world at large.

The ancient Hebrews, besides inventing and completing their wonderful language, also experimented with all things in the world; from the development of a microbe or fly up to the highest things in the universe. The result of their experiments was the discovery that the highest thing in the universe is an intelligent understanding human being. They so wrote it, so is it, and so will it always be. Furthermore, when they were through experimenting, they threw away all the bad and useless things, and kept the best, greatest, and truest things and facts for the benefit of humanity. All improvements we have made since are only mechanical; and the greater the inventions the nearer and sooner are we getting back home to discover that all those things have been so prophesied and written by those men thousands of years ago.

I discovered that about thirty-six authors or thinkers, or rather free-thinkers, banded themselves together and caused the writing of the Torah known as Genesis or Bible. To write a Torah takes several years' time even at this day, because the Torah is always written by hand and is an exact duplicate of the original, or is original always. The orthodox Jews are still writing it by hand as in the time of old. The cost of a Torah in olden days was about twelve or fifteen hundred dollars and very few people in those days ever had that

Digitized by Google

amount of money at one time to afford a Bible to themselves for study; consequently all education or miseducation was done by word of mouth.

When the ancients were through experimenting and writing they then planned to help advance humanity above the animal or savage state. They wrote out certain rules and ideas, and offered them to various people or tribes; but as most of them were then in an animal and ignorant state of mind, or rather savage, very nearly all of them rejected the thoughts of these ancient Hebrews. However, one tribe was found which agreed to try out the new ideas. A covenant or agreement was made between them. The rules laid out were circumcision, hygienic, eugenic, and other advanced ideas as written in the Bible. That tribe, I find, is the present day Jewish race scattered in and throughout the world. The reward they received for following out those rules was the Torah or the pleasure of writing it by hand but of which they do not understand its inside meaning. Over ninety-nine per cent of the Jewish race are in the same position with their Torah, as you would be if someone presented you with a safe full of money, but intentionally or unintentionally forgot to give you the combination to unlock the door. You would always see the safe in your place, but without the key you could receive no benefit from the money inside of it. The Jewish Calendar at this writing shows to be five thousand, six hundred and seventy-three years since said covenant was made. To say that God made this agreement, as the foolish rabbis or other people claim the Bible states, is nonsense. We would first have to know who made God, and out of what material did he originate from, or out of what grade of material did God make himself from, if he did his own manufacturing! So you can understand that while the first and original educational writing in the world was the Hebrew, yet the inventing and writing of the Ten Commandments, Torah, or the Bible

Digitized by Google

was all done by men. They had no more God to it than the Christians or Gentiles have a God to the making of their Bibles or books; or I have one in writing this book, unless I chose to imitate other false writers and write lies.

The unthinking Jew, Gentile, and Christian has an idea, from reading the Bible, that Moses walked up unto a mount and talked with air or spirit named Jehovah, Adonoi, or God, and in turn said air or spirit talked to him and gave him or handed him over the Ten Commandments or the Torah, and also appointed Moses as a third or second-hand God. But this is not what he did nor what is meant in the Torah's writings. The true meaning of the words as written in the Bible sets forth rules for the simple and true living of a good and natural life. These laws had nothing to do with God or a belief. They were written with the purpose of forcing away the thought about God from the people, even down to this very day.

Previous to the time of the writing of the Torah people lived nomadic lives, wandering from place to place like Indians or gypsies do. There was no history or record kept of the human race. Although the world was millions of years old, no document in any form had been preserved of one epoch to another to give us any idea of their lives and characters. All the knowledge we have of them or about them is guess; which is worthless.

The Bible became the first law-maker of the world. The rules laid down therein are for the living of the good life for everyone in the days of old and for all time to come. An eye for an eye and a life for a life is going to be more true and more valuable now than ever before.

Though circumcision may have been practiced previous to the time of the writing of the Torah, yet the fact is that the practice of it was made a general law

Digitized by Google

with the Jews from that time on, and since then it has been recognized by them as well as by many Gentiles and Christians throughout the world. The story in the Bible about Joseph resisting morally the temptation that came to him through a beautiful queen has made many men act likewise. Do away with circumcision in the world, and in one hundred years humanity will fall back into a state of wild savagery again. As a wise preventative of the deterioration of man's power and health both mentally and physically, it ought to be made a law unto all. Furthermore, through circumcision only, is eternal life on this earth possible; not otherwise.

During my search for information for the real meaning of the Scriptures I discovered that Abraham, Moses, Jesus, and the men of their time as well as the ones who came and wrote for the Bible after them, were all freethinkers. They were of that class known to-day as Atheists or infidels. They wrote or caused to be written or was written in their behalf in such a fashion that whoever would read their writings correctly would have to be free in thought. To prove this, take up the Bible and read the first two or three pages of Genesis and you will discover, providing you will read it scientifically, the denial of the existence of God! I further discovered that the first words "Beraishes Booroo Elohim," as written in the original Torah, are not translated into English correctly, as, "In the beginning God created heaven and earth"; neither does the Jewish race get its true meaning in thoughts from the above words. I also discovered that all the popes, cardinals, bishops, preachers, rabbis, and ministers in the world do not understand the first thing about the Bible's true meaning, and have therefore been mistranslating the good life thoughts from the Bible into death thoughts unto the public. As a consequence they have been misleading the public for thousands of years, and they themselves have to die as a punishment for their ignorance.

Digitized by Google

I further discovered that a great many Jewish and Gentile writers came and wrote ideas into books long after the canon of the Torah was closed. But I find that all those writers were weak in mind, and not being able to discover all that is necessary for self-perfection in the first few pages of Genesis, they then wrote their own weak thoughts into books and forced them upon the Jewish people, like Christian missionaries do unto the Gentiles. Those same thoughts and ideas have been killing some of the best Jewish people in the world, just as Christian missionaries' thoughts and ideas kill the best Gentiles in the world. I also discovered that the men who caused the Talmud to be written did more harm to the Jewish race than any other set of men ever did. There is but one true and scientific free-thought Genesis or Bible in the world; and that is all that is necessary to make a perfect human being. If you break away from it or from its laws, you are on the road downwards toward destruction, and no amount of money, drink, or pray can help you up afterwards. I will admit that the thoughts in Genesis ought to be spread in a more easier reading style so the public may understand its true meaning but I find such a work is very hard to do when it comes to putting it down on paper. However, since I started into the work I will finish it regardless of the hardship.

If it is a fact that by reading the Bible with a free mind we find in it the denial of God indirectly and directly, does this not at once smash up all the religions, beliefs, cults, and creeds of the world! Does it not also show that the popes, ministers, preachers, and rabbis have been deceiving us for thousands of years! No doubt the reader will be astonished to learn that the Bible teaches in some verses that there is no God and in others that there is. But that is a plot well laid many years ago to catch the deceiving and lazy preachers with stolen goods. The only way a good detective can catch

Digitized by Google

a cunning murderer and thief, is to become a thief for a while and work with the murderers until the right moment arrives, and the thief is caught. The Bible is the detective, and the preachers and rabbis are the guilty ones. For thousands of years they have been deceiving us, and now they are caught in their own trap through their own falsehood.

If you ask a pope, bishop, rabbi, minister, or preacher to give you the true expression and explanation of the word, God, as to the size, grade, weight, shape, or color behind that word, you will find he cannot. He will try to, but he will always leave you in the dark on the subject, just as you were before asking. And if a thing is unexplainable, indescribable, unthoughtable, and cannot be defined, it is therefore non-existent, and is not in existence! God, like anything else in the universe would have to be originated, formed or created out of some one thing first, before becoming God; and you would be obliged to trace back the original one thing, how that originated, and so would you be obliged to keep on tracing backwards and backwards until you would at last give up saying, "Why, there can't be any god!" And upon the explanation of the meaning of the words lord, unity, trinity, deity, or jehovah, the preachers are lost on the subject entirely and forever. Yet, the popes, rabbis, preachers, and ministers are drawing money from the public on account of these written words in the bible, but of which they know not their meanings, and are unable to explain them.

If a pope, preacher, rabbi, or minister were truly a representative of god, would god not at least keep them out of trouble and protect them from death or do other miracles unto them or with them! We would then observe their well being and we would all become preachers, ministers, rabbis, and popes, and why not! If a thing is good for one man, we all want it; and we would all strive to imitate the preachers in order to at-

Digitized by Google

tain and reach the highest point of protection and perfection. But you see, such a thing as a god, deity, or jehovah is not to be found nor does it exist anywheres. As you notice, during a cyclone or flood it will kill a rabbi, pope, cardinal, bishop, minister, or preacher as quickly as any other person, if in the way. Also notice when a cyclone or a flood comes into a place it destroys the church and synagogue as readily as any other building. It also makes no choice of saving the church goer who prays, or the church abstainer who never prays. And if it is a fact, and it is, that popes and preachers cannot save themselves from death or destruction, and if churches are destroyed in cyclones as readily as any other building, does this not show us and teach us a true lesson that it is folly for us to build churches, pray, and follow the false ideas of preachers!

As an illustration how a thought which has nothing behind it harms and ruins our race, let us take the idea of Santa Claus. Each child is informed to hang up its stockings in the evening, and that some Santa-less Santa is coming during the night to fill them. As the child grows up and thinks back, it discovers that all the lessons it received from its kind-hearted folks and preachers were nothing more than of a deceiving, false, and lying nature. This is what causes the child afterwards to grow into a lying youngster, and he gradually becomes a gambler, thief, and even a murderer. All this is so because he or she was taught in their young days to get or to acquire something for nothing or from nothing; and the teachings about an unseen god, or a ten-cent paper picture as a god or goddess, do the same thing to grown men and women. It is the teachings of a godless god that makes our crops of thieves, grafting policemen, grafting politicians, and the class that fills the jails, lunatic asylums, and the underworld. These sad but true conditions are with us because our folks assist the preachers in mistranslating to us the bible and

Digitized by Google

preaching to us falsehoods or ideas that the preachers themselves know nothing about or rather do not care to know anything about, and thereby causing some of the best people in the world to go wrong and suffer. No attempt whatever is made to save the best bodies and brains that could be saved out of a generation's production of human beings. Bad and good, do they lead them all into the pit and grave. And for the love of who? Six thousand years of waiting, hoping-hopelessly, without anyone ever finding god that we may all see and handle, ought to be sufficient proof to all intelligent people that all our future hopes, church-building, praying, and searching for god, is a useless waste of efforts.

If it is true, as some claim, that god is spirit, and spirit naturally means and is nothing more than air flying all around us, is it not folly for intelligent men and women to waste time, money, and energy, in building churches, and in praying to nothing more than a bit of common air! Does nature, spirit, or air not grow itself aplenty to-day, and even more than ever, in new timber, sand, water, coal, iron, tin, copper, silver, and gold as well as vulgar things, etc.! Of what use then to nature or spirit are a few thousand churches or synagogues! What use is there in praying to spirit or air that cannot understand praying! Does not spirit or air work, destroy, and grow things on Saturdays, Sundays, and holidays, as well as any other day! Is it sensible for intelligent people to build churches and to pray to an unseen and unintelligent nature, air, or spirit, that makes no effort to understand such, nor can it understand such! If we think we are wise enough to make a bit of air, god, and pray to it and bless it for all the good it does to us, ought we not be wise or foolish enough to charge up to the very same spirit or god all the bad it does to us, too! Must we not charge up to that same god, all accidents, sickness, the production of

Digitized by Google

whiskey, beer, cigarettes, extreme heat and cold, earthquakes; allowing bad people to be born into the world; as well as wild beasts, snakes, vermin, and many other bad things too filthy to mention; and worst of all, making the good suffer and die! If all the time, money, and energy that is now wasted in building churches, praying, and paying preachers to preach lies to us were used to build up laboratories, industrial, and inventing schools, we would in thirty years time have human walking angels on this earth instead of hunting for them in the sky. With the new method, saloons, houses of ill-fame, gambling places, and jails will gradually disappear for lack of patronage but not otherwise.

To show the reader that the bible absolutely denies the existence of god, read Ezekiel 13.6 "They (meaning the rabbis, pope, ministers and preachers of the world even in the present day) have seen falsehood and lying divination, that say, Jehovah saith; but Jehovah hath not sent them: and they have made men to hope that the word would be confirmed." Ezekiel 13.7 "Have ye not seen a false vision, and have ye not spoken a lying divination, in that ye say, Jehovah saith; albeit I have not spoken." The above positively proves that there never was a jehovah or god, and that the preachers have put a lying interpretation upon the true thoughts of the bible, and with this wrong idea they are killing the human race.

The following are also excellent quotations from the bible denying the existence of god. Isaiah 44.9 "They that fashion a graven image are all of them vanity; (which means being silly, senseless, thoughtless, and ignorant) and the things that they delight in shall not profit; and their own witnesses see not, nor know: that they may be put to shame." Isaiah 44.15 "Yea, he maketh a god, and worshippeth it; he maketh it a graven image and falleth down thereto." Isaiah 45.14 "Surely God is in thee; and there is none else, there is no

Digitized by Google

God." Isaiah 45.16 "They shall be put to shame, yea, confounded, all of them; they shall go into confusion together that are makers of idols." The verses given above are sufficient proof to all people that the bible absolutely denies the existence of god, and also forbids everybody and all from praying to or believing in god. Remember, the words idol and image, mean the carving out or imagining with your brain and mind such things as god, jehovah, deity, spirit, adonoi, or supreme power, which does not exist anywheres; and the bible absolutely forbids you to do such thinking or imagining. When you take a bit of air or spirit that cares nothing nor can understand anything about your thinking or praying, and you make or form it as a supposed god or goddess, you have created an image or an idol for yourself, neighbors, and children, and such is forbidden as you now understand.

If it were true that behind the words adonoi, jehovah, or deity, was god, or if it were possible for anything to be god, we would all have a chance to see and talk to him the same as Jonah, Jesus, or Moses did. If it were true that Mount Sinai and Jerusalem meant a few thousand acres of earth or land in Palestine, and if that land was holy to god, it is more than a fact that god would always keep his deserving children upon it. And if it were a fact that such land was good or better than other land, Palestine would, at the present time, have the largest amount of wealth and people living on it. But the sad fact is that money is collected all over the world and sent there to keep alive the lazy-poor-god-dreamers. Furthermore, is not the land in Italy, California, Florida, Cuba, America, Germany, Russia, or Australia, just as good if not better than the land in Palestine! Supposing the words god, lord, deity, heaven, jehovah, and adonoi had never been invented nor written, what then!

Since you now understand that the original torah

Digitized by Google

or bible was made by mere man I shall now show you how the Old and New Testaments came about for the Christian.

When I ask Christian and Gentile preachers how and what authority they have to be preachers of god, they say that they take it from both the Old and New Testaments. They admit that the Old Testament is a direct translation from the original Hebrew, which is like handling stolen goods, but they say their New Testament is entirely different because the translation was made from Greek. I was then obliged to search into the Greek language as to how it came about, and the following is the truth about Greek as it exists in the world.

Greek grammars, dictionaries, and encyclopedias tell us that Greek perhaps originated from Indo-European languages. The earliest date given is Homer's time, which is 800 B.C. Greek, as a language, did not come into general use until about 300 or 200 B.C., and the New Testament is supposed to have been translated from Greek about that time. Greek, as a language, shows its longest record of existence to be about 800 B.C., and adding the interval of nineteen hundred and thirteen years, we have the sum total of twenty-seven hundred and thirteen years.

I herewith place side by side a few of the Hebrew and Greek pronunciations of alphabetical letter sounds.

Digitized by Google

When you say

in English:	you say in Hebrew:	and in Greek:
Aa	Aleph	Alpha
Bee	Beth	Beta
Gee	Gimmel	Gamma
Dee	Daledt	Delta
Kay	Kooph	Kappa
El	Lamedt	Lambda
Em	Mem	Mu
En	Nuon	Nu
Pee	Pi	Pi
Es	Samech	Sigma
Tee	Tauve	Tau
Zee	Zoyen	Zeta
	About 6000 years old	About 3000 years old

The reader will see at a glance and understand that some man, long ago, took or stole most of the Hebrew alphabet, twisted and changed most of the sounds, and palmed off the stolen goods on people; and from that day to this it has put humanity into confusion. It is just too bad that the man did not have brain enough to steal all of the Hebrew alphabet, name it Greek, and be done with it. Now, if Greek is stolen and twisted Hebrew, the reader will readily see that it caused the story about the birth of Jesus to appear in the New Testament in a more fabulous style than the mysterious birth of Moses in the Old. In other words, the Gentiles and Christians share worse with the New Testament than with the Old, for surely with twisted lies we cannot arrive at truth. Hebrew is the only language in the world that is capable of expressing the greatest and richest thoughts. And if weak-minded people take some of its letters, twist it and name it Greek, and write lies with it, it is not the fault of the Hebrew language but of the men who do such writing and people who afterwards do such believing.

Digitized by Google

A language that has the most difficult pronunciations in its alphabetical letter-sounds, causes the greatest richness in thought and action to the individual who makes use of same, and Hebrew is that language. The Hebrew alphabet contains two pronouncing taste letters of which Greek, Russian, and a number of other foreign languages imitate only fifty per cent of. As for instance, you only say "es" for the letter S in English, while in Hebrew you would be obliged to say Samech, or in Greek, Sigma. French and German imitate or receive the benefit of only twenty-five per cent of the above mentioned Hebrew letter tastes, while English nothing at all. There is not a sound or a letter taste in the English language that it can be described in. For this reason many of the original Hebrew writings cannot be translated correctly into Greek, and much less into English or any other language. Take for instance, the story about Jonah and the whale. Most of the English reading public are astonished to read such a lie in the bible; that god kept chasing after Jonah like a politician does after graft; and Jonah did not obey god's orders; and that Jonah was living three days and nights in a whale, and came out alive. The fact is that when you read the original Hebrew with thought, you will discover that there was no god, no Jonah, and no whale. The subject refers to laboratorial work as to how to create a male or man without the use of a woman. Know, therefore, that you must not read or study the bible verse after verse or page after page, as you would this book. If you change a dollar into ten-cent pieces, any one coin serves your purpose as you use it; with the verses in the bible it is the same. Any one verse or even part of it is sufficient for you to make use of. In other words, you need not digest all.

Although words like jehovah, god, creator, pray, and religion did creep into some bibles, yet, if you think

Digitized by Google

over them, and of all existing religions for a few seconds sensibly, you will find that all fall to pieces and you have nothing left.

Supposing you, dear reader, were the real creator of the universe, and after making the sky, earth, and all other things, you decided to fly down to the earth to see what was going on, and as you flew down you landed in a bush. As you looked around for someone to talk to, you found a man near the bush, and you called out, "Moses, Moses;" and Moses answered, "Here am I." I don't know how you could ever guess the man's name without first being introduced! You then tell the man to remove or put off his shoes, and he does it. I don't see what reason you had to ask the man to remove his shoes in a hot climate with no bath-tubs in the houses as in those days! You further tell the man to go and get his grandfather, Pharaoh, into a lot of trouble, which is not nice for a god to do; and he does that, too. You instruct Moses that your only holiest and highest name in the world or universe is forever to be adonoi. You also try to convince Moses that you are the only god that ever was, is, or will be. Moses seems to be an easy fellow and listens to your instructions. But what would you think of yourself as the creator, and what would you think of the people at the same time, if afterwards, Moses makes arrangements with a Jewish tribe, for them to take over all the laws and instructions as you gave it originally, but, instead of calling you the real name of adonoi, as per your own order, they form a new name for you and nickname you "Got" as in Jewish.

What would you as creator and ruler of the universe, think of yourself, when a man by the name of St. John lets loose one day, and tells the people a secret in advance; (Mind you, a creator's advance secret!) that you are going to have a son come to the earth by the name of Jesus. And what would you

Digitized by Google

further think of yourself and of the people, if, after Jesus arrives and gets people to listen to him, he steals all the credit away from you as a god! Would it not be a foolish act on your part, as a god, to let a little boy cheat you out of all credit and universe! And would it not more than jar you, as the creator of the universe, that after all this happened, and a vatican in Rome was built, that that same boy, including his mother or your wife, Mary, gets the highest place and credit in that vatican! However, the Italians, fearing to throw you away as an old creator altogether, thinking that you are leading a lazy life somewheres like the preachers do, and fearing that you might wake up some day, they nickname you as a side issue, Dio; which is the Italian name for god.

What would you think of yourself as a god if you discovered that the French people are nicknaming you Dieu; the Greeks, Theo; while the Russians are bold enough to call you Bog, and not adonoi, as per your original orders! Would it not make you feel terrible, as the creator of the universe, if you discovered that the Finlanders nickname you, Jumala; while the Portuguese nickname you Deus! And I will bet that you would fall off your seat entirely, as the creator, if you discovered that the Armenians call you Asdvatz; while the Arab nicknames you Allah!

Also notice that the Chinese nickname you Shin; while the english-speaking believers have no respect for you at all as god; or rather give you no rest at all, for they nickname you aplenty: they call you god, lord, father, unity, trinity, deity, mother, jehovah, spirit; (So many different names; My! You cannot understand one-tenth of them, can you!) and I presume some lonesome old maids conceived the idea of nicknaming you, love. For we notice that of late, most of the women writers in the daily newspapers tell us re-

Digitized by Google

peatedly that you have changed from spirit to love. Yes, a wonderful change in print!

What would you still further think of yourself, as the creator of the universe, if you discovered that the Aramaic nicknames you Eloho; while in Japan or in India you stand no show at all as a god! For somehow they still remain satisfied to make their wooden and stone gods to order as they need them from time to time, just as they did in the days of old, or long before you made Adam and Eve, or talked to Moses, or did the sending of Jesus. Yes, in India they have anywheres from one dead god by the name of Buddha, who was once a live man, up to one thousand and one strong wooden and stone gods. They claim that they can get along with one dead god or many stone gods as well as other people get along with one godless spirit god, or no god at all. Of course, you, as spirit or air god, understand well enough that you could not compete with a thousand and one strong stone gods, because, any time one of those stone gods would happen to fall or topple over on you, you, as air, spirit, or a word deity, love, or jehovah, printed on a piece of paper, would naturally be blown to nothing, or crushed to pieces and to death between the earth and the weight of the stone god; so you keep away from such dangerous places. And by the way, what a comical fact it is to observe how so-called civilized people laugh and make fun of their wild and savage neighbors because they worship stone and wooden gods, while they who call themselves civilized pray and cry to nothing at all!

Of course, it is no wonder that so-called intelligent people can do all these funny things to you, for you understand that you would never have stood for such nonsense as god, ruler, and maker of the universe. But you now know that you cannot be a god because you would have to create yourself out of some other

Digitized by Google

thing first, which would make you a second, not a first instant or thing. You therefore care not, neither do you know nor understand what all the weak-minded and foolish fanatics in the world really do. It is immaterial to you since you know and understand nothing as god, whether they call or nickname you as in:

Hebrew	Adonoi
Jewish	Got
Greek	Theo
French	Dieu
Swedish	Gud
Spanish	Dios
Russian	Bog
German	Gott
Turkish	Allah

or whether they call you nothing at all.

So wake up, dear reader, do not imagine yourself a god, for you now can see and understand that there never was a god, never can be a god, and never will be a god; not even if they waste another thousand years hunting for one, or even changing all the godless words and names into one universal word, and writing it love, hate, jehovah, spirit, fakem, fakethem, or otherwise!

Truly, the ignorant human race has always had or wanted something to worship. At first they were satisfied with idols of stone, wood, crosses, sun, snakes, calves, pictures, bulls, and other things made in the form of their idea of a god. When the ancients originated their torah or bible, they inserted the words eloha, elohim, adonoi; translations were made into English as spirit, god, lord, unity, deity, or jehovah, so that ignorant people should still have names and words to confuse or to conform with their old images and ideas about gods. The ancient Hebrews hoped as the people's intelligence

Digitized by Google

grew, they would come to understand what was really meant by the words, and so reject their old superstitions as well as modern beliefs, and also to grasp the understanding that there is no god behind these names or words. The true meaning of these written words and all words in the original bible simply has to do with actual knowledge about industry, manufacture, ourselves, and eternal life on this earth; which means self-efficiency and a perfect human being.

The true meaning of the word, father, as written in the bible, means a male or man; nothing more and nothing less. The word angel means a footman mail-carrier in isolated places or any messenger. The word lord means a man or person with higher intelligence than that of the ordinary kind, and the word is still in use at this date, and behind it is just a human man or men; not a spirit in the sky. The men with higher intelligence who pass upon the values of laws in England are called lords, and you say, "My lord," or "Lord so-and-so," even in this day. The words jehovah god, as written in the bible, do not mean a god in the sky, nor a pope, cardinal, bishop, preacher, or minister who preaches or teaches falsehoods; neither do they mean a chief rabbi who eats a large quantity of pork chops and complains of the price being too high, nor do they mean an ordinary rabbi. The kind of thing the words refer to are men such as Marconi, Burbank, Edison, and other inventors; men who do real inventing, real creating, real working, and no god-dreaming. Such men's inventive and creative work causes other people to help them work, which in turn causes other people to live, think, work, and develop to a higher state of life efficiency; that is what is meant by the words in the bible. This is all there is to those words which foolish people have been making gods out of.

Take two old professors out of the best universities in the country, ask them what thoughts they get from

Digitized by Google

reading the bible, and you will find one may tell you that the bible tells him there is a god and he believes it to be so because he saw such word or name in the bible. The other professor will tell you that he understands that it was men who made the bible, not god; and he therefore does not pray to nor believe in god. He will further tell you that with god we have nothing but trouble and ignorance, while without god we have automobiles, flying-machines, electric cars, and many other wonderful things. The difference between the two professors is this. The believer is a man who reads the bible like women, preachers, and children do; with eyes only; while the professor who lives up to the true teaching of the bible, that there is no god, is a man who reads the bible with both eyes and brain. The believing professor turns out of his university a weak, useless, and imitating thinking grade of men, while the free-thinking professor turns out an intelligent and inventive grade of men.

There is room in this world for millions of men of the jehovah god kind or the Edison and Marconi grade. Plenty of money is waiting for new inventions of original character. So far we have only succeeded to light our cities at night, and to make water run into streets and homes for use as we need it. We must now learn to make hot and cold air run through pipes in cities and make our own hot and cold weather to order to suit ourselves; it is now possible to do it; god, preachers, rabbis, and popes will never do it for us. There is a fortune waiting for the man who will put an odorless and smokeless automobile and auto-truck on the market. The auto and auto-truck at the present time is truly a wonder, yet not perfect, because of its giving out a deadly, poisonous odor and smoke while running through the streets. This odor helps to kill people walking in the streets as well as the riders in the autos and those who ride behind them; and as I stated above, an im-

Digitized by Google

provement or a change to a smokeless and odorless running auto will bring the inventor a fortune.

If it is a fact that humanity has made progress in spite of the ministers lying to us about truth in the past, how much better progress and a purer and idealistic race of people will we have in fifty years from now! By starting off our young, telling them nature's entire truth from time to time as its brain is ready to grasp it, will cause each individual to be good to himself and to all; for self-preservation, self-respect, and self-protection make it so. This truth will even assist the older folks to reap a great benefit from, and will also relieve the preachers of the trouble of teaching us falsehoods; and by the preachers learning the entire truth, they, too, will become better men; for it is they themselves who are the cause of mostly all trouble in the world. And, as we read the newspapers of late, we find that many ministers, holy fathers, and preachers are themselves breaking the laws of nature, state. and society, like other bad individuals do.

It is a fact that the torah or bible for thousands of years or through the dark ages was the only piece of interesting literature or reading matter that was kept in front of the people to make them think, to keep them active in industry, as well as mentally, and to bring the world up to what it is to-day. The torah or bible is also the only piece of literature in the world that will at last put all the churches, popes, rabbis, and preachers out of business, and humanity will at last take a free, relieved breath. In other words, the bible did and does all this work even in the hands of the preachers and in spite of their deceptions.

The Jews, Gentiles, and Christians have been rehearsing for a long time the first lessons in knowledge which were given them through the Hebrews first writings. We have now grown strong and sane enough to take our second and last lesson which will put us back to

Digitized by Google

true original knowledge, greatness, happiness, freedom, truth, and justice to all forever onwards.

It is only within recent years that humanity has advanced faster than at any time previous; this is because the United States allows freedom of thought and press. Printing-presses were invented, more literature spread, and the people, learning how to read, are at last awakening to their senses and read the bible and understand it as it originally should have been understood. By so doing each individual learns the true expression as written in the bible, that there is no god. When anyone reads the torah or bible for himself and thinks at the same time, he at once discovers that such a thing as god said, god spoke, god called, god talked, or god walked, is not possible; for it takes a man to talk, walk, speak, or call; and the person at once becomes strong enough to reject all false ideas about a god. To-day, with modern and wonderful inventions all about him, an individual is able to make good headway and develop his brain without false god scares that won't and can't scare, because there is nothing behind such scares but printers ink and leaden type. Supposing a child would open the door and search for the bogey-man when it is scared with the idea of one. You know that it would never find one!

If it were possible for me to tell the reader or the world that with the thought of believing in god we would make better progress, I would gladly do so. Yes, I would tell it a million times over and again. It will cost me no more to write lies than to write the truth, and to write lies is terribly easy. And most assuredly the printing bill will be the same, the printing-press will never complain, and the printing type will never know the difference. But, as seriously and as honestly as I have searched into nature as far back as she goes; into all religions, creeds, sects, and cults; into the original old scriptures, and into the Old and New Testaments,

Digitized by Google

I am obliged to say frankly and honestly that we will make much better and faster progress without a jehovah, or god, than with one; and we will do splendidly without preachers and churches. Not only are the above words true, but I discovered that no person can attain power or reach to a height of self-efficiency and work out eternal life and true happiness on this earth with the thought about god in him or her, for, each thought about god immediately weakens the individual's mind and body on account of the thought. The individual, through thinking of god, loses the power of self-control and thought-energy that he ought to hold on to and apply to his own body and self. With every thought about god or a jehovah, a certain amount of electricity and life energy is wasted that if kept by the individual would help him to intelligently rebuild and regrow the body perpetually, fearlessly, cleanly and beautifully.

In the torah or the original bible there is one word of significance to the ignorant. It is adonoi, and is pronounced in English, jehovah. Of this word neither a rabbi nor a Jew understands the meaning; and a pope, christian, preacher, and most of the Gentiles, much less. It is only the most liberal and free-minded in thought who are able to decipher the truth of it. No rabbi has the knowledge of the meaning of this word other than thinking, like a woman, that it means a god somewheres in the air or sky; if he did, he would be ashamed to be a rabbi.

Since you now understand that all words and writings were invented by men; and since you understand that the men who invented the English language only put the words god and deity on paper with nothing behind them; and since you also understand that the words god, spirit, deity, jehovah, and adonoi would have no meaning or bearing at all to a German, Frenchman, or an Italian in front of or inside the vatican at Rome, I therefore decided to take the highest meaning Hebrew

Digitized by Google

word in the world namely, adonoi (meaning jehovah, deity, god, or spirit to the ignorant), and will translate this word into English in the style it ought to be translated. You already understand that such a thing as god is not possible; I am therefore excluding all other words representing gods or no gods; for what is the use of wasting time writing about lesser grades of gods or lords when such a word as adonoi simply means a clean thinking, clean acting, and bright minded inventing individual human being. The word adonoi, written in Hebrew, is spelled in four letters, JHVH. It is pronounced in English, jehovah, meaning deity, and, properly deciphered, gives the secret or knowledge to each individual of how to become a perfect human being.

In writing this book I am only using the first two letters of the word, JHVH, for the first two letters are also pronounced adonoi in Hebrew just as though the four letters were used, but meaning and representing certain upper parts of our bodies; signifying self-development and the method of securing same; the wisdom of life eternal, and life the simple; about the brain, and air we breathe; or air itself, which is the universal and perpetual life maker, feeder, and keeper of the world and universe. In other words, it takes a whole volume to spread the thoughts of two Hebrew letters. At some future time I may write another book describing the meaning of the last two letters, although they are indirectly well covered in this book. By assisting yourself to perfection according to the rules laid out in this book, you help yourself to become a deity and a jehovah unto yourself while you are living, and you keep yourself living, too. And all without god, pray, preacher, or church!

Digitized by Google

PART TWO

A TRIP BEYOND THE SUN

WHILE the cuts in the front part of this book give you an idea of the situation of the universe, yet, I feel I ought to tell you in written words what you may or may not find beyond the sun's orbit. I am therefore obliged to take you for a mental trip and show you what there is in the universe at large.

As soon as we leave the earth we get into the air, which is similar to the air we breathe in the city or country, the air gradually changing to a lighter grade as we travel onwards. After going hundreds and thousands of miles, we reach the home of the moon. The moon's atmosphere, as you now know, is made up of various grades of very cold air, gases, and vapors coming up from the earth as surplus waste from cold substances such as ice-plants, metals, cold water, cold regions, and icebergs. While the moon and some of the stars are of cold vapor-air coming up from the earth, yet the earth is able to draw from the moon, a cold supply of air any time she is in need of any. This is easily done through the earth's fast revolution, together with the heat forced through from the sun's circle which is beyond and around the moon's circle.

The moon being made up of cold air and vapors is heavier in weight than heat, and being situated between the fast turning of the earth and the sun's heat, the moon therefore is obliged to keep traveling and moving constantly. This is because cold air moves in space rapidly, while hot air but slightly. As you will notice when you open a window, and if cold outside, a cold

Digitized by Google

air will rush into your room in a moving style; but if the weather is hot outside, there will be no inrush of air. Hot air being lighter in weight than cold, will always rise upwards or beyond it; as you will notice in a basement or in your room the warmer air always moves toward the ceiling. It is for this reason that the sun makes itself and is beyond the moon.

After leaving the moon the air becomes somewhat lighter, and in a little while gets warmer and warmer until it becomes as hot as fire, and we are at the home of the sun. This fire heat is coming up from the earth as waste heat from factory smoke-stacks, chimneys, constant accidental fires of burning buildings, lumber, merchandise, animal, and all other waste heat that cannot be saved or made use of by the people of the earth. This, naturally, is what helps make the sun. Some of this heat in turn is drawn back toward the earth at any time it is needed and space is made.

After leaving the home of the sun we go further beyond, passing through other spaces of air, vapors, and gases containing stars. Onward we travel until we reach nature's finest and lightest atoms. The space we are in now is vast and large, and all purified atoms are made and gathered in this space. It therefore causes the air atoms up in this space to be very light and fine in grade and weight. If you were to light a candle or a lamp in a dark room, the air in the room would cause the lamp or candle to evolute fire and to burn, and in turn you would have a new creation of fine light atoms mixed in with the air all around in the room, but it would be impossible for you to handle the atoms of light owing to their lightness in weight; you would be able to use it only. So is it with the workings of the universe on the outside.

Since we are in such a fine atmosphere, we are able to travel at a rate of a billion miles a second. We will just keep on going and you will find that there is no

Digitized by Google

change in this fine light air or atmosphere; its very fineness keeps right on steadily. So you see there is no wonder that the people of the earth get plenty of air in all things they handle or use. You wish to know whether we will ever reach an end, or come to some change or station? Why, no. That is the way this atmosphere is, runs, and continues in space, forever endless! We can just keep on going and going forever, and we will find ourselves in the same kind of atmosphere as we are in now.

However, I shall take you on farther, and will show you that we will find no change nor end, no matter how long nor how far we may travel; for I have been up here mentally many times and found none. I will even go farther with you than I have ever traveled myself, and will show you that although we are making billions of miles a minute in this atmosphere, we still find no change, no resting place, and no end. You can see for yourself that the universe and the earth hangs on nothing, turns on nothing, and rests on nothing; because if it did, that very same something would have to rest or hang on some other thing, which, of course, would wind up in nothing to rest or hang on. You can also see now that there is nothing nor nobody holding the earth and turning it, or sitting on top of the universe and ruling or managing it, as some weak-minded people seem to imagine. The fact is, there is no such thing as top, bottom, above, below, sides, beginning, ending, or ruling to nature at large. The human being only, has the privilege of such; and in many instances he allowed words and thoughts to carry him too far, or not far enough.

Now let us continue our journey further, just for the good of it, so as to make sure and to be convinced that we cannot find an end. Have you noticed that no one stopped us on the way and asked for any information! Neither have we seen any live or dead souls or spirits as they call them on earth. We do not even find any

Digitized by Google

saints or devils to bother us! Neither are there any old maids playing harps that we can see; nor any angels, judges, nor god, as some unthinking people have been writing or talking about. Look around carefully and see if you can find any heaven or hell? No! Not a thing of the kind to be seen anywheres. Everything is moving in this fine atmosphere in peaceful and natural order; there is not a thing to disturb or trouble us; and no sign of god, lord, deity, or a jehovah to be seen.

Do I hear you think that when you get back from your mental trip, you will tell friends and other people how you have enjoyed it, and that from now on you are going to live in harmony with nature's laws, so that you may become healthy, strong, and happy, without the aid of god, doctors, preachers, false story-tellers, or ignorant writers! I am certainly pleased to hear you think so. But before you go, I want you to search and watch closely and make sure that you have discovered that there is nothing in the entire universe, on the earth, on the sun, above and beyond the sun, anywheres and everywheres that will disturb you after this spiritually, mentally, or physically. You can see for yourself that nature works thoughtlessly in action, but fair in most things; in other words, she attends to her own business, and we must do likewise. You can further see that such ideas as scare thoughts, fear thoughts, image thoughts, hell thoughts, god thoughts, evil thoughts, and evil deeds, are all of men and women's creation, invention and action; they have absolutely nothing to do with nature; and nature knows not that such thoughts or ideas are in existence in the world; nor cares not!

The human race is fast awakening to these facts and in consequence, will soon cease to live in error or in fear. By so doing, their lives will become naturally pure, strong and happy, and they will be as gods of the earth, and will make the earth a paradise. They will learn to understand that the earth is the only place

Digitized by Google

upon which actual life or living is worth while. They will also learn to understand that the earth is the only place in the universe where matter and air mixes, lives, grows, enjoys, and exists together; in all other places it is either in the changing, or in the destroying state, and therefore lifeless or amounts to nothing.

Now let us return homewards. Did I hear you think you liked it up here so well that you wished you could come up here every day for a few minutes? Well, when you have learned to understand the law of nature as explained in this book, you will be able to do so. Presently you are back safely in your surroundings as you were before making the great mental trip. You are naturally much wiser than you were before; and I hope you will remember and make use of all the good points you have learned on your way during the great mental journey.

Digitized by Google

PART THREE

WHAT NATURE IS

The Wonders of Human Superior Intelligence in Designing, Building, and Acting, as against the Rough and Unintelligent Action of Wild Nature.

If nature entire were seen in one figure, nothing beautiful would be seen and nothing of greatness or of interest could be told; for nature only develops everything in a wild and rough state. She grows wild fruits, sand, water, rock, wild animals, and wild human beings. It is men who step in and work and sweat their brains to develop and to make the world beautiful and wonderful. It was men's brains that changed the designs from living in a cave or dugout to a modern apartment house or mansion. It was a great man's great brain that invented the adding-machine which adds figures into millions quickly without mistakes. Think of the great man's brain that invented the automobile, a wonder that nature cannot imitate, for the auto needs no food and lives splendidly without any when it is not running; whereas a horse or mule would die on no food. Think of the wonder of the flying-machine, and only in its infancy. Some men have already learned to be way ahead of wild nature. Our last home run is now and must be now for everlasting life on this earth, or life eternal on this earth without a funeral to it.

In this book I shall open wide the gate of nature, that all who read and think may pass through and see things as they are. The reader will then no longer be in doubt of what he is intended for but will become stronger and better for the knowledge. To understand

Digitized by Google

nature, one must see her naked from all points of view. Its real truth heretofore has been imperfectly taught and therefore misleading.

Nature cannot and must not be thought of as somebody or something like god, or that a divine power has made or is making it, because we would at once be obliged to ask who made that somebody, that something, or that god who made nature; or from what material did that supreme being originally originate himself from!

Nature does not operate by and through a supreme or divine power, as some foolish people imagine; neither is she a preconceived or prechosen idea of anything or of anyone, for, as soon as a thing is or exists in nature, whether it is a bit of dust, electricity, radium, sun, or any other thing, it is impossible for it to be a ruler, creator, god, or divine power. Half-wild or half-civilized human beings have named or called nature god, and divine or supreme power, which means image, idol, or nothing. Stub-born as the ass they refuse to take one more step from darkness into light, and thereby forfeit knowledge, freedom, joy, life, and all. The fact is that their own imaginary thought about a loving divine god is the very thing that keeps them in darkness and destroys them. Will they ever awaken to their own power and intelligence!

Nature never operates or starts to work at things the way a carpenter does when he begins to make a table and finishes it; or as a builder begins to build a house or barn and completes it; or as a person who begins and finishes certain or many articles in a certain length of time. Nature's work is making things from invisible air into visible matter, and vice-versa. In other words, she is beginningless and endless in all her work. She first makes and grows a thing and then destroys it. This does not mean that if wood is burned or decays that it will ever be wood again, neither does

Digitized by Google

it mean that if John Smith dies, he or his soul is going to be a Tom Johnson, a negro, or some other person in the future. Nature is an ever-present, self-perpetuating, changing, destroying, remaking, and self-regrowing blind system of atom substances such as air, fire, earth, sand, matter, water, gases, and vapors; and as such they constantly change from matter into air and from air into matter, and as they are self-changing and self-perpetuating, they must therefore continue to regrow, renew, and remake themselves constantly from the above mentioned few things.

Each atom of gas, air, or matter in the universe fights for its own perpetuation and life existence, the same as you fight for your existence. Each atom of air, gas, or matter always draws to itself its affinities or weaker atoms, destroys them, and continues growing, or else is overpowered by a stronger atom, and is obliged to yield; it is then consumed, changed, or dies into said other atom, and this is how a new creation is accidentally caused and created in nature. The new works right on for perpetual reproduction and existence until again consumed by some still stronger atom or forces, and so does it continue onwards and onwards forever. When invisible atoms of vapor and air grow matter, said matter simply continues changing gradually and constantly. The tree continues growing, which means changing atoms. If you cut it down and burn it, or it decays, it has simply changed atoms. If you eat food, you cause it to change from one style of atoms into another; and when you eliminate waste, or sweat, it is but changed atoms.

Nature as self-perpetuating makes and changes all things every moment, and owing to its rapid movements it must continue to create all things constantly, without a boss or ruler; otherwise the human race and animals would cover up the earth with dirt and filth and we would be obliged to have god or the divine power come

Digitized by Google

down and clean the earth for us every few years else we would die off on account of unsanitary conditions.

The origin, creation, and birth of nature entire is always the ever-present moment and at all times so. In other words, the world and the universe is newly born from moment to moment as much as a thousand years ago, a million years ago, or ever; otherwise it would be destruction of everything every few years, every few hours, or every few moments, and we would all be nothing more than vapor, gases, or air in space. Since nature is a perpetual momentary creation, she can never go backwards nor rest for an instant, neither can she go very much forward; but whenever she does make a forward movement, then there is plenty of trouble and destruction on which is evidenced by earthquakes, cyclones, or floods. In such cases she does not save anybody nor anything that is in her way, for she does not understand anybody or anything, not even herself. This positively proves that nature operates blindly and roughly in all things, and it also proves her lack of intelligence and of control.

Nature cannot act intelligently because there is nothing there to receive, hold, or act it; even if it got a million barrels of intelligence each moment. The human being is the only piece of matter that creates and uses intelligence; nature does not. You will notice that a large crop of fruit, grain, and other matter is sometimes destroyed by nature an hour before being removed from the field. The weather changing by nature is done without system or intelligence; we sometimes have one hour rain, the next hour, snow, and the next, sunshine. Notice how blind nature grows trees without intelligence or system; a group of trees will be found growing on one spot, while other trees will be found scattered here, there, and everywhere, apparently without any aim or design. If you or I were planting or growing trees we would use intelligence; we would

Digitized by Google

set them out at regular distances, in all forms and designs pleasing to the eye, and such method we could call superior or supreme intelligence. Nature is vast, big, large in size, but without intelligence; while human beings are small, but some are large and vast in intelligence. It is for this reason that they are able to make nature their slave, and make her obey their intelligent orders.

If it were not for our own intelligence, we would all be the slaves of nature and wild beasts, because they, being much stronger than we are, could band themselves together and eat us all up, or make us work for them. But little as we are in bodily form, we possess big intelligence in brain and mind, and we therefore invented guns by which wild beasts are kept from doing us harm. Two-legged animals or beasts, who are a worse enemy to humanity and themselves than the four-legged beasts are, are also kept down through the same method.

When a human being creates or invents there is intelligence to his creation and invention. If it is a lamp, it can be lit or put out at any time; if it is a motor or an engine, it can be made to run day and night without stop for several years at a time, or it can be stopped at any moment; while in nature, everything runs itself perpetually, without intelligence. So has it been, so is it, and so will it always be.

To become intelligent, you must learn nature from two standpoints, namely: the MATERIAL (Matter), and the NO-THING (Air). When you learn and understand how both operate at all times, it will enable you to make a success of any and all your undertakings in the future. In entering into the study of nature and self-efficiency it is advisable for you to break away from all useless and so-called chums. Gossiping and arguing people will not benefit nor teach you anything. If anything, they will help to destroy your very life as well as their own. You can study your lessons at any time

Digitized by Google

all by yourself, while at work, walking in the street, riding to and from your work, on railroads, or on steamships; because nature is always around you wherever you are, and is at your service and pleasure in the form of visible matter and invisible air, if you will but so learn it.

If you go to a department store to buy a suit, you have all kinds laid out before you. But did you ever stop to think that a hundred years ago neither you, store, nor goods were in any material form or shape! You as well as the store and all the goods and people in it, were in the form of air. Nature by her continuous work of evolution grew the whole material, including yourself, into matter; other human beings formed and shaped the building and the goods; and to-day, the products are laid before you, as well as you are before the products, that you may purchase what you desire. So you see, that air, the NO-THING, gradually works into matter and through this combination, you, and all things you see about you are the natural results and success.

Air, or spirit without matter, is no success of anything; neither is matter unless it understands air, and the living human being is the only matter in the universe that is capable of so doing.

I am well aware that preachers of cults and creeds are constantly telling us that nature aims at spirits or air only, which is teaching death and destruction. My advice to all such is to keep that kind of information to themselves. If it were true that nature was only aiming for spirits, air, or nothing, we would not be here in a material or bodily form at all; neither would we have any matter at all such as stone, marble, iron, gold, diamonds, cotton, water, earth, nor any other material things to live off or with. For what would be the use! The true fact is that nature works unceasingly, day and night, not resting for one moment to grow, regrow, and produce material things. She is aiming as much to

Digitized by Google

turn out more matter as she is to turn out more spirits, air, or nothing. Notice how the farmer plants a few bushels of seed in the spring, and how, a few months later, a large crop of matter is taken off and away from nature. Notice also, that if a grain of wheat was laid aside in a dry place, that grain of wheat would continue to live forever without death or a change into spirit, air, or nothing. Take an orange for example; cut into it, take out the seeds, plant them in the ground, and a few years later you will have a large number of trees bearing fruit. In each fruit, you will have a reproduction of more seeds with which to plant many more trees of the same fruit. So you see, from a few seeds, you cause to grow thousands and thousands of other trees; which means from little matter, much matter. The increase in population is also a further proof that nature aims as much at more matter, as at spirits. Just look at yourself. You grew from nothing to the great, big-sized, wonderful, understanding piece of matter you now are, whether you cared to or not. So you can understand that matter occupies the same position in the universe as air does; in other words, one is just as important as the other.

Therefore, learn to know yourself and to understand the value of air and matter together as well as separate or apart from each other, and it will cause you to acquire natural human intelligence; and with this intelligence you will be able to comprehend, understand, and do all things intelligently and successfully.

Digitized by Google

PART FOUR

CREATION OF AIR AND MATTER

Perpetual Creation of Air and Matter in the Universe, and its Perpetuality.

I AM now going to show you how matter gradually develops and makes itself by and through air, and how air makes itself through matter.

The constant turning and revolving of the earth at a very high speed causes all forms of atoms, wind, air, and heat to be created constantly, perpetually, and unceasingly; just as a fast running train causes and creates a forceful windy atmosphere; or, as you notice, the fast turning of an electric fan creates a new atmosphere and windy space.

The first thing known as matter is a speck or small atom of dust; just as you notice how a large number of particles of dust accumulated in one place in your room will, in time, make a handful of substance or material. In the same way do things combine, form, create, and grow themselves anywheres and everywheres. Know, that when very fine air atoms become too thick in space, they combine and gather themselves together, and through their own weight are forced and fall down toward the earth (just as rain and snow does), and as they fall and land upon earth, rivers, lakes, oceans, and other matter, the result is matter of some kind or grade, relative to the place, time, and atmosphere at the moment of organization, combination, formation, and falling. Rain or snow is visible to our eyes because it is already matter completed; while air atoms are not visible to our eyes because they are colorless and in an unfinished

Digitized by Google

state of matter working toward the making of matter. A combination of millions of atoms of air will make a drop of water; so many drops of water make the oceans; the oceans and air make and grow timber, salt, rock, sand, metals, earth, vegetation, fish, amphibious animals, and ourselves. In short, the fast turning earth makes constantly air, gases, and mist; air and mist make water; water and air make matter; and all operate, destroy, and create back and forth constantly, perpetually, and forever.

In a certain spot millions of atoms of water and air will gather together and a speck of salt will be the result; and therefore salt will be found there in plenty. Further along, where the atmosphere and temperature change a trifle, the result will be a speck of sand instead of a speck of salt; and we have earth in plenty. Still farther on or deeper in the earth coal, marble, minerals, metals, and other things will be found. Now that you know that air is the real cause of creating and producing everything in matter, and that matter is the cause of producing everything in air, you will understand that in all separate things you will find many or a few foreign substances mixed in with itself. For without a combination of two or more different elements, there can be no formation, new creation, or growth of anything.

THEREFORE

In FIRE	you will find	AIR,	WATER,	and EARTH.
In AIR	you will find	FIRE,	EARTH,	and WATER.
In WATER	you will find	EARTH,	HEAT,	and AIR.
In EARTH	you will find	WATER,	AIR,	and HEAT.

At a glance, you will notice that the above elements, through their own affinity, are working constantly to create and reproduce their own kind of substances; the same as horses reproduce more horses, flowers repro-

Digitized by Google

duce more seeds and consequently more flowers. This work goes on continuously everywhere; on the earth as well as inside the earth; on top of the ocean as well as inside of the ocean; at the seashore as well as at the little brook; on a farmer's ranch, as well as in the back yard of a city dwelling. The work is a never ceasing one. Since the above elements are constantly working and mixing between themselves, all kinds of substances form and create themselves, and they in turn regenerate, change, and regrow themselves, each working for its own self-existence. It is immaterial whether a man names it hydrogen, corodium, electricity, quintessence, ether, spirit, earth, sand, water, fish, wood, people, dogs, nitrogen, rats, elephants, holy spirit, horse dung, hogs, potatoes, ammonia, marble, copper, paper, salt, fertilizer, air, smoke, gold, tin, iron, dirt, oysters, oxygen, thorium, radium, or other names. Names and words are simply invented and created as they are needed. They are used as a convenient guide in exchange of thought while sending messages through the mail, or conversing by word of mouth, or while writing into bibles, or books that teach, or cheat.

Some men or people will name air atoms, electricity, radium, oxygen, hydrogen, ether, thorium, spirit, or other names; and a great many weak-minded followers, not being broad enough to understand the workings of nature, will become enslaved to words, and will really imagine something new has been discovered. The fact is, there are hundreds of different grades of air atoms and substances mixed in the air, and have been there for thousands of years waiting for us to make use of; but as we have not as yet learned how to make use of them, we have not as yet named them. The only thing now left to discover, is our own foolishness, ignorance, and waste of energy; not words. Therefore, pay no attention whatever to any particular word or name that has been written in the past or may be written in the

Digitized by Google

future, by anyone on any subject. You now know that words and names change to fool people.

To show you that in water you will find earth, fire, and air, take a kettle of water and boil it; and you will find some earth settling on the bottom of the kettle. Air is always mixed in with water, because water always lives in the air and is a direct creation of it; and no matter how deep a depth you draw water from, you will always find air mixed in with it. Heat is also inclosed in each drop of water, but people understand that heat does not necessarily mean a boiling heat. A warmth is sufficient to call heat; because, when water loses its entire heat or warmth, it freezes, and you have no more water, but ice instead.

Fire contains and is enclosed by air, because without air you will have no fire. Remove air from fire and it exhausts itself at once. In order to have fire, you must have air as well as matter to create the fire with and from, so it may burn. You now understand that all matter whether wood, coal, oil, gasolene, or other burning material always contains a certain percentage of water; because one is always mixed with the other. Wood growing in the earth contains water; clothing made out of cotton, and cotton likewise growing in the earth, contains water. Woolen clothing coming from sheep, contains a certain percentage of water, as well as a certain amount of oily substance which burns slowly when mixed with air.

Since I have explained the above items to you and have shown you the truth, you will understand that the entire workings of all matter and air in the universe work out in similar shape and form.

Have you ever noticed that when it snows in a place and the temperature falls below zero, though the sun may be shining for several days, yet the sun's rays or

Digitized by Google

heat will not melt the snow or ice? It is hot air coming in from a farther out space that will at times make a cold place warm, and not the sun. It is also cold air rushing into a place that makes the place cold for any length of time. It it were true that the sun did all the heating, or that her shining upon a mass of snow or icebergs would melt it, we would never have any snow or icebergs at all; neither would we have a North or South Pole nor any cold regions, because the sun shines always. If the sun's rays did all the heating, all snow should always melt from the top instead of from the bottom. But you have noticed, I presume, as well as I have, that although the sun, shining upon snow, never melts the upper part first, the melting commences from the bottom always. This is done by warm air working through the snow and connecting with its affinity-earth, causing a warmth to be created under the snow, and this in turn starts the dissolving of the snow at the bottom, first, and always so. This proves that the sun does not do all the heating in the universe as most people imagine. The sun does but part of the heating in the universe while the earth creates and supplies her share, for one works in connection with the other, else there would be neither.

Did I hear you think that you would like to know how it is possible for icebergs and cold atmospheres to make themselves inside of the hot sun's circle or orbit? Well, that is an easy matter to explain. Air in light becomes dry and warm, while air in darkness becomes cold; as you may notice, a basement or home where the light is constantly kept out, is always cool regardless of the heat outside. As the earth revolves at a high rate of speed, a constant rush of air goes back into and through her, and the air getting into her very deeply, and it, being without light, for light cannot enter through sand or solid matter easily, except glass, it is reasonable to understand that light cannot enter into a

Digitized by Google

very deep depth of the earth; and all such air therefore becomes cold. Cold air working inside the deep and dark earth causes coldness to its baby or affinity-water; cold water constantly being forced out from the earth, in turn causes the outside atmosphere to become cold, and both in turn help the water to freeze, and in this way you get ice, and consequently icebergs in plenty. By understanding the above you can see that since coldness creates itself constantly inside of the hot sun's circle, and that each grade or thing in the universe fights for its own existence, we are safe and well protected against the earth being frozen or burned up as some foolish writers write about.

In nature, extreme coldness finally causes heat, while extreme heat finally causes coldness; for all things as a rule change gradually. Even climates in different parts of the world change, regardless of men's ideas and writings. Twenty years ago New York City had severe cold winters. To-day or at the time of this writing it has practically no winter at all. Take again Denver, in Colorado. Up to ten years ago it had summer nearly all the time; while of late years, the winters have been very cold and severe. So you can see that we ought not to set our minds upon false and weak writers of text-books that are studied and taught in schools of learning.

True thinkers and understanders of nature entire can understand and comprehend all changes and workings of nature truly. They do not have to use books nor the rules laid down in any. What they use is their brains, which is the best guide of all. Blind nature is constantly changing everything, and no book can ever keep up with its constant change. The best book or guide in the world on the great subject, is the one you are reading now; but it cannot give or spread all knowledge on each subject for you. You must therefore learn to educate yourself with the help of this book, so that you may add knowledge unto yourself from hour to

Digitized by Google

hour, day to day, as you live and things happen to you, and as you see and learn things actually. This book is only as an eye, brain and mind opener, to start you on the road to self-development and self-learning; the same as when you learn the A, B, C, in school, which develops and brings you out into the road of reading, and you are afterwards able to read anything you see or please by yourself. Therefore, make yourself act likewise, after reading this book.

Digitized by Google

PART FIVE

HOW THINGS GROW IN NATURE

The Secret How Things Develop and Grow, Revealed.

WHEN a thing grows and develops in the universe, whatever that may be, it grows slowly through the self-gathering of tiny air atoms, and all without the help of anybody. You now understand that when invisible air atoms become too thick in space they cause a substance to be formed, and as such, it becomes matter completed. It then may be handled and seen by anybody and everybody.

Take a glass of water, drop into it a spoonful of salt or sugar, and the sugar or salt will at once sink to the bottom of the glass. Ordinarily, a person never pays any attention as to what goes on after the sugar or salt is dropped into the water. By walking up and down the room and looking at the glass, you will notice nothing at all. But just take the glass and hold it up in front of the sunlight, or an electric or gas light, and you will be able to see hundreds and hundreds of little tiny atoms moving toward the top slowly, but surely. As you watch the tiny atoms moving in the glass of water, you see nature at work, with your eyes, brain, and mind; so, in the very same manner, do fine and tiny air atoms gather themselves outside and perpetually work, make, change, grow, and constantly ripen our crops of potatoes, grain, fruit, flowers, marble, ice, water, coal, trees, birds, animals, iron, stars, sun, moon, and all other things including itself and ourselves throughout the universe. So has it always been and so will it always be. This is as far as nature goes and this is as far as the human

Digitized by Google

mind and brain will ever trace nature back into her secret and mysterious work of growing, developing, and building the universe.

The human race need not waste any more of its valuable time hunting or trying to discover some mysterious god, spirit, or angels that do the growing for us, for there are none nowheres and will discover none any-other-wheres. The whole mystery of how things grow, as I have explained above, is now revealed to all, and will therefore be no more secret or mystery.

The reason fruit, grain, and other matter grows slowly, is because it takes the gathering of billions and billions of fine air atoms to gradually produce complete growth and a finished product; whether it is the seed of a flower or the flower itself, or whether it is a baby, tree, rock, coal, or other thing makes no difference. The operation is the same in all things; in some slower, in others faster, according to the location, space, time. and atmosphere.

Digitized by Google

PART SIX

THE WORD PRAY, ANALYZED

THE reason we have so many incompetent or unworthy people with us to-day is because of the word, pray. In our childhood days, our folks and preachers were constantly advising and telling us, that to their imagination, the best men the world ever had, did nothing but pray to god or spirit, and there was no other work left for us to do but imitate them. Such advice and teachings are bad. As children, we are not trained properly, and not taught to make the best of ourselves. Such impressions forced upon the young mind destroy the best ideas and goodness that may be in even the worst child. Supposing the word, pray, had never been invented nor written!

When we start out to develop a crop of wrong children, we naturally reap a harvest of worst men and women. The way the tree is bent so will it grow. When children are taught to acquire things for nothing or from nothing, as through praying, such thoughts will naturally develop them into a wrong state of life, and it is very seldom that a mind is able to throw off the wrong thoughts and ideas that were hammered into it during its infancy. As the children continue to grow, it causes the world to be full of grown men and women with false ideas and wrong thoughts which causes them to act accordingly. The weak-minded, who are the lazy-minded ones, naturally continue to keep up their old system and wrong methods, imagining that praying will help them or the world out of trouble. But in reality it gets all the people in the world into more and deeper

Digitized by Google

trouble, and everyone suffers the consequences as a whole.

Let me analyze the word, pray, for you so that you will really understand what the word is, how it leads the people in the wrong direction, and how it also misleads and ruins some of the best minds and finest people in the world.

The word, pray, means an idea for a request or demand; and a demand is always made to get something for pay, for work, or entirely free, or with ease. When people start to pray, to thank, or to wish, they are obliged to create something to pray to. Old church-followers or church goers imagine for themselves during praying, or for the time being, a self indescribable thing, under the letters g, o, d; to which they pray constantly, or occasionally, until the action finally kills them. Our modern weak-minded wishers (who are the Reformers, Christian Scientists, followers of the New Thought Church, and all other kinds in between) have a new form of praying. They simply agree to hypnotize themselves into a happy state of imagination for a certain limited period of time. After the time limit is up, the person, having failed to receive the goods wished for, "express paid," starts the whole operation over again, sometimes changing the colors of imagination, thinking that that would help some. Of course, you know that a person can imagine a great many things and colors without ever having a chance to use any in reality. Such and all forms of praying is like a person trying to hypnotize himself before going to bed at night, with the thought that a one-dollar bill will change to two by the next morning. All such foolishness, tricks, and waste of time, have never accomplished anything in the world and never will. The people who waste their time in praying at last discover, I presume, that the only way to get things in reality is to work for them or buy them at the stores.

Digitized by Google

When you try to pray to a god, that god in your own estimation must be a bigger or greater thing than yourself, otherwise you would not be wasting time praying to it at all. Your demand or praying to the god, is for something easy, or something for nothing, else you would not pray. That being the case, you are directly and indirectly making a thief of the very god you are praying to, and you also show your intention of dishonesty, weakness, and bribery to your made god. If a god were possible, which you now understand is not, and was listening to your demand, he would at once tell you in reply to your prayer, to stop making him a thief. He would speak to you in this style. "In your prayer to me, you want me to go over to John Smith, your neighbor, who, in my estimation is as good a person as you are, and you want me to take (which is as good or as bad as stealing) some of the things or wealth he sweated for and earned, and you want me to transfer it over to you." A god would at once pick up his wings and fly away from you, never to return. Such an idea of praying, a god would call real sinning and foolishness. If, on the other hand, you were thanking your made god, but which is nobody else's god, for the good things you have, the god would simply say in reply, "Why it is ridiculous for you to waste time, thanking me for things you are already in possession of."

Wild, dreaming, and half-civilized people sweat in putting brick and stone together, and name it church; whereas, if a god were possible and needed churches or had use for praying, he could cause them to grow into existence out of pure gold and silver. Church building and praying is therefore useless and nonsensical. Yet such is the sad case even at this modern date, and the performers thereof who think and act in this wise are naturally rewarded wrongwise.

Some people say that Jesus did nothing but pray, and everybody must imitate him. Of course, from a

Digitized by Google

deceiving preacher's standpoint, this may be so. But when I pick up the bible and read it, I find an entirely different story. Read Matthew 6.9 "Our Father who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name." The word "father," the reader now understands, means any man or male on the earth. The words "hallow" and "heaven," like the word hell, means nothing and no place; or whatever place you please to imagine about in thought, while thinking it. Such things as hell, hallow, and heaven exist no place in the universe except in print, thought, and speech. A wise and sensible person, after he shuts the door of his home and of his inside self, and goes down on his knees and prays from fifteen to a hundred times, or prays in church, will at last discover that he was simply talking to himself in every instance. He will also discover that while he is talking or praying to a supposed god, his neighbors across the street, or next to the church, are eating or quarrelling at the same moment. He discovers that while he is endeavoring to arouse the attention of god, that same god would have to be busy listening to people living in other parts of the city or world, who are also troubling him with their prayers at the same moment. Since it is impossible for a god to listen or to answer so many different people's prayers at the same instant, a sensible person, therefore, cannot expect any results from prayer. He at last learns that praying is simply a waste of time and action, and nothing gained. He then stops praying and gets down to actual work.

God would at once go crazy and it would instantly burst him into nothingness if it were possible for him to listen or to pay attention at the same moment to all thanksgiving, praying, demanding, foolishness, happiness, vulgarity, dreaming, grafting, life, death, troubles, accidents, sleeping, murdering, awakening, flying, creating, changing, and thinking that happens during any one moment of time throughout the world. As these

Digitized by Google

things are created by human beings from moment to moment, it makes all the aforementioned things a continuous performance at all times. You can therefore understand that it would be impossible for the biggest deity or jehovah in the universe to attend to such foolish nonsense. He could not pay attention to it if he would, and would not attend to it because he could not; not even with a billion spirits or saints to help him out in the work. Of course, you already understand that such words as spirits, saints, god, deity, or jehovah exist nowheres in the universe except in print.

To show the reader that Jesus did not want anyone to build churches or to pray, read Matthew 6.5 "And when ye pray, ye shall not be as hypocrites: for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men." I wonder whether there was a lazy Salvation Army in olden days, too! To show the reader that Jesus did not believe in god, knew there was no god, and knew that there could not be any god, just take this hint from the bible. Read Luke 17.20 "And being asked when the Kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation," meaning that since you cannot observe a thing, it is not in existence. There is, therefore, no god. Read John 10.34 "Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?" Also Mark 7.8 "Ye leave the commandment of god, and hold fast the tradition of men." Mark 7.9 "And he said unto them, Full well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your tradition." The above are instructions to you, advising that you should and must reject the idea of believing in a god, and but follow your own tradition or free will and become a perfect human being. To show how we have been cheated and deceived by the preachers and long robe-wearers of the world, read Luke 20.45 "And in the hearing of all the people

Digitized by Google

he said unto his disciples," Luke 20.46 "Beware of the scribes (meaning popes, rabbis and preachers), who desire to walk in long robes, and love salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts:" Luke 20.47 "Who devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation." The above verses from the New Testament are a sufficient hint to any twentieth century person with a clear brain and free heart, to see that Jesus said long ago that there is no god, and warns you not to have anything to do with churches, praying, popes, preachers, or god. You must understand that it is the preachers at the present day who are deceiving the public, as much as in the days of old; for the fact is that both the Old and New Testaments deny the existence of god.

Here is further warning from the bible not to pray. Read Isaiah 1.15, "Yea, when ye make prayers, I will not hear:" Isaiah 44.17 "He maketh a god, even his graven image; he falleth down unto it and worshippeth, and prayeth unto it, and saith, Deliver me;" Isaiah 45.20 "They have no knowledge that carry the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god that cannot save."

If you were to take all the air in the universe and name it spirit or spirits, and add to it the capital letters H, O, L, Y, and think it, or pronounce it holy spirit, and pray or wish to it forever, it will not get, help, do, or grow a thing for you; neither must you think that masses, organ playing, wine sipping, or the putting on of wax, oil, holy water (holy by name only), will ever accomplish anything for you or for the performer and indulger of such foolishness and uselessness! Nature only grows and works with and for men or women who do real planting and actual work. Nature only helps those who work and try to help themselves. By sitting down, wishing, waiting, and praying, which means

Digitized by Google

nothing, the return or reward is always accordingly; likewise nothing.

Since tiny air atoms are scattered in abundance on the earth, in buildings, in your room, as well as in all space, it naturally follows that if you will but do the planting, nature will do the growing; for nature never rests. She works seven days and nights in the week, year in and year out. The deceiving preachers are the only ones who rest all the time in the week, except for one hour of lie-telling and lie-teaching on Sundays. Buy a penny's worth of mixed seeds, say flowers and vegetables; take an empty lard pail or a wooden box, fill it with earth, put in your seeds mixed as they are, hang up the pail or box in the center of your room, water it daily, and you will soon see some greenish matter sprouting. A few weeks later you will have flowers in bloom, and ripe vegetables to eat. Since all this has happened right in front of your eyes and in your own room, would you, as an intelligent person, go down on your knees and pray or thank the air and water that caused it to grow! Is such an act of praying to air and water sensible! If, on the other hand, you intentionally or unintentionally failed to water the seeds or withheld the air from them, you would have no flowers and no vegetables; regardless whether you prayed to the air in your room for a day, a year, or forever. To pray is wrong and useless, and should be stopped at once by all sensible and intelligent people.

You already understand that nature works blindly and unintelligently, and therefore cannot build us huts, houses, railroads, nor steamships. It is we as human beings who must work and make better things in order to attain a higher plane of natural existence. In other words, actual work is the only real rewarder and happiness maker in the world no matter what that line of work may be; whether working in factories or planting in

Digitized by Google

the fields. I find that the United States Government Land Office has still about seven hundred millions of acres of land, which is about one-third of the size of the United States, to give away free. A postal to the U. S. Land Office at Washington, D. C., will bring you information as to the free land distribution in various states. If you are a citizen of the United States, you are entitled to about one hundred and sixty acres of free land in any one state that such land is available. I think the time to secure permanent ownership has been reduced in some states from five to three years of actual living on the land. After you have chosen from the pamphlet which you have received from Washington, D. C., the particular state in which you desire to secure land in, you then write to the state capitol of that particular state, addressing care of state land office department. They will then mail you all further information regarding county in which land is located, nearness to railroad, city, town, and so forth. If the one hundred and twenty-five thousand preachers in the United States would apply for some of the above mentioned free land, and teach their followers to do a little actual work instead of wasting their time in teaching them to pray to a godless god, they would at least help to keep them out of a miserable existence and suffering.

Our parents are also to be blamed for our present troubles. If they had checked back the bible years ago to see whether the preachers were really preaching the bible's truth, their children or we, would have been out of trouble long ago. Parents must also be aware of the fact that they are responsible for their good or bad offsprings. People at the present time must aim at few children of good quality, and not quantity. Ignorance is no excuse at all now-a-days, because knowledge is freely to be had everywheres. In former days, when all work was done by hand, it was reasonable for parents to raise large families for the reason that as the years

Digitized by Google

passed, and if it were necessary, the parents could be dependent upon their children. But in our modern days, where the machine takes the place of men, parents should be more careful not to bring too many children into the world. Such action on the part of parents will help presently and futurely to build and grow a good child as well as good parents. People permitting themselves to have a large number of children within a few years time, kill themselves; and their offsprings share no better. It is much better for a mother to bring up one or two children right, than a dozen wrong. The time between one child and another should be stretched many years apart; twenty years between one child and another is not any too long if a perfect child is desired. People must learn to be as stingy or as careful about raising large families for blind air, wind, or spirit, as they would be in throwing their money away to the wind. Parents must also bear in mind that they are working in the wrong direction when they obey only one rule of the bible where it says "Be fruitful and multiply." Teddy-bear followers seem to have too much bear wool over their eyes to notice the other saying in Genesis 3.3 "Neither shall you touch it, lest ye die."

Every person should see to it that his first child is well able to make a success of things in the world before another is brought in to help make bad conditions worse for the first; otherwise both are destroyed and lost, and nothing gained by parents, children, or society. People have no more right to take chances of bringing a second child into the world when they cannot take good care of one, than they have the right of taking a second suit of clothes on the installment plan, when they cannot meet the payment of one easily. Parents must also remember that health, strength, and knowledge for children cannot be bought nor had from school teachers, preachers, god, praying, doctors, public, poli-

Digitized by Google

ticians, laws, nor foods; individual and natural knowledge alone accomplishes such, and our parents owe us that knowledge. It would cost society or the public a fortune to develop a child from bad into good, if such a child was spoiled by ignorant parents. It is therefore the parents' duty to direct such child in the right way, since the pleasure was all their own. There are millions of children and millions of people as well, that all the schooling and teaching in the world would be of no value or help to, nor to the public.

Our left-over preachers and our folks seem to think they have the monopoly on all knowledge just because they were born before we were; which idea is not true. A child at the age of twelve at the present day, knows and understands more things in general, than people in former days did and old people of the present day do during a lifetime of eighty years. It is the grown folks and preachers we ought to send to school; and the sooner the better. Since many people seem to be waiting for a god or a messiah to come down and help them out of trouble after they allowed themselves to get into it, or pray to a godless god to save them when they can save themselves, it is therefore a fact that they have not as yet learned how to raise a good child, and much less a good people. Wrong ideas forced upon us in our young days by our own folks and preachers, cause us to desire and do things that we ought not; and our punishment is the jail or death.

The right thought to put into a child's young brain, as well as to those who are grown, should be that the world had fine men living in the past, but they are all dead and gone; and they can therefore do nothing more for us. It is now up to ourselves to create, combine, and design better and greater things than men did in the past. Such thoughts held up before young and old will eventually develop a good and pure race. We ought to look toward each individual and make him

Digitized by Google

feel that he owes something real, something different, and something great to the world while here and enjoying life. It is in the nature of nearly most of us, as bad as we are, to design, create, and accomplish something great for the benefit of humanity as soon as we are well launched into the world. The wrong and waste ideas about praying and thinking of god, forced upon the young and constantly held up before all, causes and makes most go wrong and to finally become complete failures.

The work of the world through and with the aid of some free-thinkers, designers, and builders, is constantly moving the human race upwards. It is our own foolish folks and left-over lazy preachers who like to drag us back mentally to lead a life that was led by savages and fanatics thousands of years ago. They do not realize that for the success of the advanced life it is best to follow in the steps of the advanced and up-to-date free-thinkers and inventors, the same as in the days of old; else we would still be backwards or in the same position as the Europeans are at the present day. Let the past take care of itself, which it does anyhow. Since we cannot stop the earth and make her take us back to the old happenings nor to yesterday, we can do no good wasting time imitating customs of ancient and modern fanatics.

It is best to send a child to school until it learns how to read well. It should then be sent to work into different industries, and the money earned and saved should be spent for travel through their own and foreign countries. This method of education will give the child a chance to see and know things actually; and the results will be much better than wasting time in colleges, learning things out of books that are years behind in knowledge and information. A great many ideas are taught in colleges which are absolutely false and wrong; and the professor is not even aware of it. A child should

Digitized by Google

never be told a proofless or meaningless word; neither should it be taught to pray, nor scared into a belief about a godless god. Parents should and must teach their offsprings the secret of nature in advance time, and such knowledge will cause the child to act right, for the child will then know that it is a case of either self-preservation or self-ruination. We cannot expect this vital knowledge from preachers because they break the laws of nature themselves. Neither can we expect any results from praying to air, or god, because wild nature is constantly forcing the trouble upon us, and but few out of the many thus far have been capable of combating and subduing it; and they are not preachers at that.

Tell the young and old that there are millions of things to be done in a better way than they were ever done before. Such thoughts put into a child's brain will cause the child to finally become a good man or woman. If we once start off to educate the young in the right natural direction, we will have no trouble whatever in the world with grown people.

By following along the true natural laws of nature's good and bad possibilities, and rejecting the bad and applying the good to yourself, you will in time be able to become a leader and master of all things instead of a beggar or follower. By using the intelligent life power that is inside of you, and of which you alone are the overseer, overlord, and the director of, you can gradually grow yourself up to the highest point of self-efficiency and self-success in all true and reasonable undertakings, in the same way as nature, through tiny air atoms, gradually and in time grows strong and great oaks.

We must awaken to real facts and know that nobody and nothing in the universe can help or assist us into things better and greater, than we ourselves can. We must all admit that we were brought up and taught

Digitized by Google

wrong on nearly every subject. It is our duty now to change into the natural, true, and better method. If we do so, things will then begin to develop and grow into a better and finer materialization for each of us and consequently for all of us. And all such can only be accomplished or reached by not thinking of god nor praying.

Digitized by Google

PART SEVEN

THOUGHT

The Only True and Scientific Way How To Think Right And How Not To Think Wrong.

THIS article on thought is originated, combined, and formed, and is presented for use to the world for the first time. In it is unraveled the meaning of mind, soul, life, and other such words which people have thought to be mysterious; but which are not mysterious at all.

Everybody in the world thinks more or less; but as to how a thought is caused and created, and how thinking is done, no one could explain to me. In searching through the most difficult volumes written on scientific subjects in the past, I could not find even a hint on the subject. I then instructed my brain to get to work on the subject, and after a year's time of hard labor I discovered truthfully how thinking is done, from the first step of forming, creating, and receiving a thought, to the rejecting of and sending out and away of a thought.

WHY, HOW, AND WHERE A THOUGHT IS FORMED AND CREATED

First

The brain being flesh and wet matter, if alive in a human body, will draw to itself and combine with air, its own affinity, or the very thing which caused and helped the brain to grow and to become brain.

Digitized by Google

Second

Air coming in contact with the brain and the brain coming in touch with air or receiving it, makes and turns the new combination of elements into a new creation; because a combination of two or more elements that will combine, causes and makes a new creation always. As for instance, water and clay make brick; or heat and dough make bread.

Third

Brain, being matter while alive, is capable and strong enough to take air, a soft flowing substance, and consume or kill it. This causes a new formation or change and finally a new creation which in turn starts a new change and feeling throughout the brain and body; the same as when a brick that is thrown into a vacant room causes a new and entire change of mixing and moving of the air in said room; or as when a stone that is thrown into a tub of water or into a lake immediately causes a moving, stirring, and changing all over, around, and inside that body of water.

Fourth

The combination of air and brain working and mixing together at each breath repeatedly and perpetually, causes and results in a new change, formation, and creation in the brain every time we breathe and send in a new supply of fresh air to do the living as well as the thinking with. This we name or call THOUGHT, which means and is mind-soul-life making. This is what causes and makes us feel, know, understand; or feeling, knowing, and understanding.

Fifth

A live body and brain, in order to perpetuate its own life existence continuously, is forced to breathe

Digitized by Google

in or inhale fresh air and to exhale poisoned air. Through this operation of inhaling, which is done through the nostrils or nose, a new and fresh supply of air is constantly sent up to the brain to form, create, change, and design new and fresh thoughts; while the exhaling constantly carries away from the body all poisonous air, including poisonous or useless thoughts from the brain as well as good thoughts also; unless the person is wise enough to hold on to the good thoughts and not allow them to escape.

Sixth

Each and every thought created, formed, and made by the brain has a movement, an action, a feeling, a touching, a destroying, and a building value of either death or life, good or bad, to the brain itself and the body; in the same way as when you make your tongue touch salt, your tongue, brain, and entire body will feel a salty taste, while, if immediately after having tasted the salt you make your tongue touch sugar, your entire self, body, and brain will feel the change to a sweet taste. Each thought therefore, as created from moment to moment, has a different value of taste and action toward your body and life making, as well as to your future growth and body-building.

Thoughts must be watched continuously by you to make or cause them to do good building for you, and also to train thoughts to act intelligently, or else they will do you up roughly and blindly, for you now understand the action of blind and unintelligent nature. You will then have no one to blame, to complain to, or to praise, but your own self for the results, bad or good.

Digitized by Google

Thought Positive

OR HOW TO THINK IN THE RIGHT WAY

How Thought Positive acts Individually, In General, and Universally.

Thought Positive, which is nothing more than air killed or consumed by the brain, creates thoughts, which in turn cause and make desires and feelings for something, anything, everything, and at times for nothing. It is called by some instinct, intuition, affinity, mind, will, ingenuity, magnetism, power, soul, intelligence, and what not. However, the fact is that ordinary Thought Positive is what caused all the alphabetical letters in the world to be invented; all languages to be formed; all books to be written; all the buildings in the world to go up; all the inventing in anything and everything; and all humanity to move upwards from a savage into an ideal state. In short, thought is understanding and knowledge; and as such it is the direct cause of all changing, inventing, moving, acting, life continuing, and life upbuilding in and through the human race as well as through each living individual human being. And all through a THOUGHT.

Thought Negative, or the wrong way to think, is the direct cause of all destruction, mistakes, beliefs, falsehoods, troubles, fear, ignorance, hate, murder, selfishness, jealousy, smoking, drinking, stealing, grafting, vulgarity, and death; also through human brains or through the individual human being himself or herself.

Some weak-minded people, who do not understand how to think right or to control self so the exhaling air should not rob them of the good thoughts created by themselves from moment to moment, fall victims and slaves to all troubles and wickedness. This is what

Digitized by Google

causes drunkenness, church going, praying, and even the losing of understanding of self. Those same people become followers and slaves of words, whiskey, beer, smoking, cults, and creeds; they look for gods, search for angels, imagine heavens, hells, and spirits that exist nowheres. They do not even know whether they are deceived, or whether they deceive themselves, their children, and others. They will follow any fool who will name them a strange word like god, mind, spirit, or soul; not understanding that the real and true life-giver, maker, and keeper is nothing more than the breathing of ordinary air. They even die for misleading words, here in this beautiful world, in order not to breathe air elsewhere at all. It is strange indeed how people will look, hunt, and search for spirits, soul, or mind, when the whole thing is inside of them and they themselves are making and using it constantly, and even renewing it from moment to moment as in continuous breathing; yet, hunting for it in skies, churches, graves, and where not! Their position may be likened to that of the fool who was searching for his horse while he was sitting upon it and driving it. Oh, dear! When will the human race awaken to its own simple wonders!

When I traced back the word, soul, to see how and from where it originated, I found it to be a translation of the Hebrew word "Naifesh." This word in Hebrew means a living human being, alive, acting, and moving; not as our misleaders or preachers tell us, that soul means living after death. Is it possible for a dead person to breathe? No! Of course not! When you do no breathing, as after death, you can do no creating of soul-life or of thoughts, can you? Consequently you cannot enjoy the pleasure of thinking, feeling, imagining, nor meditating. And as a dead body is not classed in the life making class, death, therefore, means and is no-feeling, no-nothing, know-nothing, everything lost and destroyed forever.

Digitized by Google

Since thought is air-substance, and ideas are created with it, and since air is the life feeder of each body, and since air must be exhaled by each individual, and thoughts come out with it, you will naturally understand that the air we breathe is constantly full of thoughts. As long as you breathe you are obliged to think even against your own will; and it is impossible to stop thinking for even one minute, no matter how hard you try.

Air, consumed by the brain, causes and creates thoughts and life constantly. Thoughts being created in abundance constantly and leaving the thinkers or the people who create them, fly out and mix in the air, perpetually. This causes other people to pick up thoughts from the air, and in turn causes a constant exchange of new thoughts and ideas between the human race and human beings. Even animals and beasts make use of our surplus thoughts; as when you notice them first being tamed and trained by human beings and afterwards imitating some human acts as you see them do on the stage.

New and good thoughts created and scattered constantly, and picked up by others constantly, cause human beings to move, live, and build all great things for the pleasure of itself and humanity.

Thought is the power of the world. All thought is done in silence but has actual effects when put into action; as you will notice in the building of the Panama Canal, or the planting of potatoes. It takes human thought to do designing and planting, and blind nature will do the growing. All great and small things in the world are done through the means of human thoughts first, and worked out materially afterwards. Each thought is a thing and has a value to itself, good or bad, small or great.

A great thought when put to actual work will result in great accomplishments. Note how an architect forms

Digitized by Google

and creates a design for a building of great magnificence. He first plans a great thought idea in his brain and afterwards draws it out on paper, and you then see a design of the building. Laborers are afterwards put to work, and the building goes up and stands as a model of beauty, and every passer-by, seeing it, knows that the design for the building originated in and through the brain of only a man. The lesser thinker, who digs the foundation and carries the brick and stone to help build the building, cannot comprehend how the building is going to look until he sees it all finished. So you see there is a difference between a creating brain and a following or an imitating brain. The architect, if necessary, could imitate the laborer and in time build the whole building himself without the assistance of anyone; but the lesser thinker or the common laborer could never in the world with his undeveloped brain, imitate the architect. I am well aware that our present day socialists and suffragettes will differ with me on this point; they imagine that all people are capable of creating and imitating alike in all the various industries and professions. If they wish to confirm the truth of it, they may put it to the test. All they have to do is to take a little of their money they are now foolishly wasting, and make a few decent experiments with it, and they will soon discover that my words are concrete facts, while their ideas, but false illusions. They will discover that most men who work in a dye-house, or sweep streets, are not capable of weaving cloth at a loom. They will also discover that the person who weaves woolen cloth has to use more brain intelligence than the man weaving cotton cloth; the man who does the designing in woolen is way ahead in brain capacity of the best weaver; and the manufacturer is way ahead and above them all. So is it now, and so may or may it not be in the future.

At the time when people were living more of a

Digitized by Google

lazy socialistic life, everybody lived in a hole in the ground instead of living in a building. Through thoughts and action we have gradually advanced, and it has finally brought us up to what we are now and what we do now. And who but a fool would care to go back to the days of old and live like a half-civilized being! Money, foolish law-making, excessive feeding of the stomach is animal life only; and short at that. People leading and following such lives have never nor will ever create something new or great, for all great inventing is always done through hardship and through free thought with free air. How many socialists, suffragettes, or government officials would work as hard as Edison with the wealth he is surrounded with! High living, joy riding, and vulgarity would be their accomplishments.

It is human thought which causes finished products to appear; from a tooth-pick up to a flying-machine. Positive thought causes one person to go right, negative thought causes another to go wrong. Thought and action causes one man to live in a palace, while thought and actionless causes another to live in a hovel. Yet the opportunities are better to-day than ever for millions of more men like Edison, and millions of more millionaires. The person who fears in thought that some one man or a thousand men will gather all the wealth of the country (which they could not do), is the very one who never has any nor will ever have any. Learn to accumulate and count your own wealth and to attend to your own affairs, and you will always gain more. By wasting time trying to guess the amount of other people's wealth or to have it taken away from them through an Income Tax Law your share will accordingly be less or nothing at all. Money grows and is manufactured as well as destroyed or lost daily and constantly, the same as any other commodity. The per-

Digitized by Google

son who is not an imitator but an originator in ideas and inventions soon gets rich fearlessly.

Thought, through the brain, is done in three ways, whether you are conscious of its operation or not. It is being done as in the past, as in the present, and as in the future. If you bought an automobile, and the man who instructed you how to run it told you to put the lever into a certain notch, and that it would run forward, and if, after so doing, you discovered that the automobile ran backwards instead, would you not at once call the man down for misinstructing you! The human body is the auto. But thought, which is done with air, and air not being a visible thing to most, causes many bodies to operate and grow backwards or forwards, which is wrong; and the individual is not even able to see or understand that his body is going toward destruction. Because of these sad conditions existing in human beings, it helps preachers, labor leaders, politicians, suffragettes, and socialists to lead their flocks astray.

To think right, know that as a human being you are the only thing in the universe that has the gift, the opportunity, and the privilege to use and make use of three methods of thinking: namely, backwards, presently, and forwards; which means past, present, or future. Because of this fact, eternal existence on earth for the human being is possible. Know then, that you must not and should not waste much time upon past thoughts or happenings. Make your brain carry as much or as little of past thoughts as will guard you against trouble, presently or futurely. Run through and discard past and useless thoughts occasionally; but always think and work with and for the present only. An occasional thought happily into the future is all that is necessary to guide yourself against the wrong and waste thought-energy about a past or a future.

Digitized by Google

You, I, everybody, nothing, and nobody cannot help you out of past troubles because you are already out; neither can you be put into a future, because it has not arrived yet! Would it do you any good, or could you or would you accomplish anything of value if you thought back to yesterday, to last year, to a thousand years ago, to a million years ago, to a billion years ago, or to a moment ago! Would you or could you accomplish anything of value to brood or fear over things that may or may not happen in a month from now, a year from now, a thousand years from now, or a hundred million years from now! Since you, as one human being by yourself, working, drawing, and making your own life and world, and other people as well as other things around you whether beast, spirit, air, or matter, are doing the very same thing, and since their growth and development in ways, thoughts, and actions, are of a different nature than yours, you will therefore find that your plans in most cases do not materialize or work out as you originally thought and planned them to, a month previous, a day previous, an hour previous, and at times, if only a moment previous. So get wise and always think a happy present, and a happy future will naturally arrive for you.

Know that each thought as you create it, goes out into space, makes a circle in the universe, spreads in space, and returns back to you like the echo of your voice in a cave or amongst mountains. The traveling rate of a thought is the fastest in the universe; distance makes no difference. You now know that air causes life and thought; and since air contains electricity, ether, radium, and every other grade of fast traveling atoms, it therefore causes our thoughts to travel out far and fast in space and to return to us instantly. A thought will travel to any place you direct it to and back again instantaneously. Your thought will travel up to the moon and back again to you in as fast

Digitized by Google

a time as a thought would about a thing which is only a few inches away from you. Your thought will travel up to the sun, a distance of over ninety million miles, or beyond it, as fast as it will travel the distance of an eighth of an inch, or the thickness of a fine silk thread. It takes as quick a time to think the thought of one dollar, a hundred dollars, a thousand dollars, or a million dollars, as it does one penny.

It takes but a second to think of the idea of planting a hundred pear or other fruit trees; and when you plant them you have to wait seven or eight years before you can eat of its fruit. This is because all thought, which is done through air, works and moves fast, while in matter slow; knowing as you do that it takes billions of similar air atoms to grow anything into matter. It took me less than a minute of time to think the entire thought contents of this book before I started to write and dictate the ideas for reading matter, but it took me over two years of hard labor including Sundays and holidays to make it matter-readable. And if a union labor leader would dictate hours to me it would have taken ten years before I could have presented it to the public. As it is I put in seventeen to nineteen hours daily and many days I let pass by without even wasting a minute's time for food or to drink water. It takes you but a second to think of making a thousand mile trip but when you prepare and undertake it, it will take about eighteen hours in a fast train to cover it; and about two months to walk it in. It takes you but a second to think of allowing yourself to get into a certain business, social gatherings, eloping, schemes, or other affairs; and when you get into them, it at times takes you from two months to fifty years before you can get out of them or be released of its trouble. So better think, and then think fast again, and then again, and then try to get along without the action. This will save you many troubles and useless hardships.

Digitized by Google

The reason why so many creeds, cults, religions, politics, and societies of different grades and variations exist in the world, is because one true thought has been taken out of the bible, misunderstood, and twisted into hundreds of different wrong ways. So you can see that thought builds all things for us, bad or good. Know that it is yourself who is the creator, inventor, and designer of all your life thoughts, as to what they should be and as to how good they shall be.

Thought passes rapidly through walls and into space, just as an X-Ray machine photographs through a body, wall, or building. A thought created, always reports itself back again to the originator, and stays and exists in the brain for a long time afterwards; this is why most persons confess to their own guilt or crime when cross-examined in court

Since a thought works positively and negatively it therefore has a building as well as a destroying materialization to itself. For instance, the blooming of an apple tree in Spring is a positive sign (weather permitting) that apples will be the result later on; but as soon as the apple is grown to ripeness, the negative or destroying side of wild nature starts to work on the same apple and rots and destroys it. Negative or wild thought acts toward the human body in the same way. Although weak-minded people pray to god for help, yet he does not help them out of their trouble any, and death overtakes them if they keep on praying long enough; just as an apple is rotted when it falls off the tree and stays on the ground long enough. The apple possesses no brain and consequently has no intelligence to think of walking away to a better place or space to protect itself. Neither is the apple able to reject thoughts or ideas that are harmful to itself; while the human being has the brain, and through and with this piece of brain we can reject all harmful or negative thoughts; we can also reject all harmful food and ma-

Digitized by Google

terial things which are not to our pleasing or to our life building.

No other thing in the universe but the brain of a live human being can understand, feel, or know the difference between a positive and a negative thought, or the difference between a good or bad thing, its action, and result in advance. Even air (which some name god, spirit, or deity) has no understanding of itself. It simply flies all around and about us in a wild state. It is scattered in all directions, and through breeze and wind is carried up to the moon, the sun, beyond the sun, forced down back again to the earth into filthy saloons; from the filthy saloons it is immediately carried into churches and synagogues; from them it is carried into livery stables and pig pens; and so are its movements in a constant, wild, unsystematic, and chaotic state. When it comes to us, it is consumed and killed by our brains, and changed into a thought; but you see that same air or spirit leaves us, as in exhaling air, in a poisoned condition. So where is your god!

If an apple falls off a tree and remains for so many hours on the ground, it is destroyed and rotted into dust. If a human being stays around on the earth for fifty or a hundred years, and absorbs false thoughts and ideas from preachers or his own folks, and follows in their footsteps, he or she, too, is drawn into the earth and rotted into dust. But let a human being (not god, mind you!) come along, pick up the apple on the first day or two of its falling, place it in a certain atmosphere or in cold storage, and the same apple will live and exist for many more months. So is it with a human being. If he picks himself up in time, which means anytime, and anytime means NOW, and causes his brain, through a bit of air, to make a change in the atmospheric thought in himself or herself, and thinks free, true, and happy life thoughts with it in abundance, such change of action (which costs nothing, not even the

Digitized by Google

price of storage) commences to develop perpetual and eternal life for the individual, here on this earth. The human being, by constantly creating life thoughts, goes on and lives; but the apple could not imitate us perpetually because it does not know nor understand how.

Since you now understand that thought works in a positive and negative manner, and since thoughts, good and bad, are mixed together in the air we breathe, you will therefore understand that thought comes to us in a wild state as well as in a mild state. Mild is the positive, true, good, and happy form, while wild is the negative, vulgar, false, harmful, and ill-feeling thoughts.

All thoughts and ideas of good grades must first be created through the brain and then sent down throughout the body as a firm order. You should see to it that its orders are carried out, and after a little practice along these lines your body will obey. As soon as people will learn that it costs no more to create good, happy, and clean thoughts, than bad and vulgar thoughts, just that soon will this world of human beings begin to change itself from bad into good.

In order to become a perfect and ideal person, you must learn to do perfect and ideal thinking; and in order to do ideal thinking, you must learn to form and create good, positive, and ideal thoughts. You must also learn to be able to reject all bad and vulgar thoughts that may happen to be in the air you breathe, but which are not intended for you directly. When you take a bit of air into your brain, and create a happy thought with it, and as the thought takes a flight out into the universe, it not only comes back to you in the happy state you directed it out, but other people, standing in the path of your thought, will indirectly breathe in and enjoy your kind thought creation without knowing you or from where it came from. As you think good in thought toward yourself and others, others, too, do the

Digitized by Google

same thing indirectly toward you. Since like begets like in nature, you will understand that each happy and healthy thought you create for yourself, comes back to you in the same style to help you make and create more of the same kind; and consequently, you, through your own effort are causing to build and effect for yourself a strong, happy, and healthy body which is your own reward, for the reason that you are your own cause as well as the effect.

Learn to think sincerely on each thought or set of thoughts. Think about them in a positive form or in their favor, then reverse the same thoughts or ideas to the negative side and think against them. By so doing, a new creation of thoughts falls in between. This we call REASON. You, being in the middle or between the positive and negative thoughts, will be able to reason out for yourself whether to act on and accept the positive ideas and to reject the negative, or vice versa. You will also be able to reason out for yourself whether to reject both ideas altogether, which is very good to do at times for it will not allow you to get into useless trouble.

Practice to receive and force away from you each idea or set of ideas, bad or good, the same as you would act in rejecting a room, a house, or other things not to your liking. By so doing you will become a power unto yourself and you will be able to make yourself what you care or will. It will also enable you to act and stand alone. Through this method you will be able to reason out in advance, all ideas as to their value. Through this method you will be able to reject all harmful ideas away from you forever, or make good ones stay with you always; and all without the advice or assistance of anyone. Through this knowledge you will also be able to detect quickly the weakness in other people's brains, and you will withdraw from such entirely. This is

Digitized by Google

always the best and only guard against getting into useless trouble, but is better than getting into trouble and then trying to get out of it.

A good thinker reads words and thinks thoughts about the words, and searches for thoughts between the space of the words as well as between the space of the lines. This is what makes and causes good, true, and correct thinking, for it will help you to create new ideas just out of that no-space. This I call invisible thinking. If you acquire the art of invisible thinking, it will enable you to originate and create grand ideas and thoughts by and for yourself, and after a while you will be able to give up reading other people's thoughts altogether. The invisible thinker improves upon all existing things, past and present, and also originates and creates new, different, and greater things than already exist. The visible thinker is at best but an imitator. He is only capable of learning and doing things when he reads other's ideas, or when he is shown by others how to do things, and this causes him to remain stationary always. The visible thinker easily becomes a wrong thinker, and as such he easily twists true things and facts into wrong, and causes many people to suffer thereby. Wrong thinkers waste all their time dreaming of a past and imagining spirits and a false heavenly future simply because an arch wrong thinker once wrote such words.

Think sincerely and sensibly. If your thoughts can be turned into actual realities, as in causing an article to appear in a better style than it did formerly, then get busy and make it or have it made and put it on the market to be sold. All other baseless thoughts or imaginations which have no reality behind them, as in fiction-reading, god-thinking, preaching, or heaven-dreaming, should not be entertained at all; for such ideas are the cause of killing the human race as well as the originators themselves.

Digitized by Google

Learn to think well and you will do, be, and receive well. Learn to think more and to eat less; the exchange will reduce your body materially in weight but way up in power and strength physically, and higher and sweeter mentally. The more great thoughts you think unto yourself and not toward god, spirits, nor angels, the greater, more true, and more powerful will your body and self become. No matter how many good thoughts you think or create, keep them to yourself. Do not waste any time telling them to others unless they are interested in receiving your ideas, and by so doing you will cause others no injury.

Your thoughts and everybody's thoughts act, move, and travel through the air in silence in the same way as the throwing of a match or a bit of paper into a tub of water or pond causes a circle wave to move and spread in silence all around that body of water. Thought acts and travels silently, while speech, the baby of thought, acts and moves in the universe noisily. Notice how the sound of a speaker's voice will be heard by many people in a hall; the same sound will penetrate through walls, and people in the next room or in the next building, or across the street will be able to receive the speaker's voice or words. Thought acts in the same manner. The sound of speech travels onwards throughout the universe, and a thought much faster; because thought, created by and through human beings with air, is the king, the overlord of and above all other things in the universe.

All thoughts, good or bad, must be received into the brain kindly and freely; all thoughts must be used by the individual kindly and freely; and all thoughts, good or bad, must be forced out of the brain kindly and freely, even if they come to us in a bad, weak, or valueless style. Train your brain to detect each and every thought as it comes to you, to see what news or grade of goods they have for you; for you now understand

Digitized by Google

that each breath of air you breathe in through your nose, carries in itself different kinds and grades of thoughts from all different kinds and grades of people; and you must therefore learn to guard yourself against wild thoughts. Always analyze and feel all thoughts as they come to you. If they are of a clean, happy, and healthy grade, make use of them for your own benefit by consuming and sending them down throughout your body as life builders. If, on the other hand, the grade of thoughts is not to your liking, send it away from you with the poisoned air as it leaves your nostrils; or, you may take a bad thought, change it, and create out of it a good and happy thought if you so choose. This is done just as easily and as quickly as the sending out or the rejecting of a bad thought, when you once learn to master the art of thought.

When you once master the art of thinking you will be able to develop your brain to a state where you will be able to see things with your brain instead of with your eyes; for you will then understand that it is your brain that must see things, and not your eyes; for your eyes are only in front of you, the same as a window is in a building. You perhaps have noticed when you go to a place you intend to enter, that your brain, not observing the number, does not recognize it although your eyes may have seen it, and you simply walk right on. Your brain suddenly brings you back to the original thought and you at once see that you have walked too far. You can therefore understand that it is your brain that sees things for you, not your eyes. Always use your brain to see all things with, and your eyes, only to look through and upon things. Use them both, but make your brain the king of and above all things inside and outside of you.

By mastering the art of thought by yourself, this very same world as it is, the very line of work you are at now, the very same room or surroundings you are in

Digitized by Google

now, will in a little while appear to you, as it were, a paradise; for you will help make it so. By mastering the art of good thinking you will be able to create goodness and happiness in you, around you, and all about you at any time and anywheres. Through this method you will become a pleasure unto yourself and others, and all others in turn will find the same in you and with you.

Since you now understand truthfully that it is your brain and a bit of air that creates and makes a thought, I shall, for your convenience, write a little more on the subject, illustrating to you how you may grasp the understanding of quickly receiving, rejecting, recalling, sending, changing, and creating thoughts and ideas. When you awake in the morning, your brain first receives a message informing you that you are alive. Let us call this a receiving thought. This is done as naturally as a phone rings in a place calling for someone. (In the front part of this book, I told you that sleep is caused by the earth turning away from the sun, which puts part of humanity at times with their heads downwards; and yet, to nature there is no down or up. Lying down as we do while asleep, is an intermediate way of living and resting. While we sleep, nature and our body works. She heals and repairs the entire body of all the damage it received during the previous day and also repairs it in the best shape for the next day's labor. So you see a human being is practically reborn every morning, and renewed during every night. As we turn toward the sun in the morning, and other people commence to get up, and start to think real life thoughts, the thoughts scatter out and around the entire vicinity; and as the life thoughts get too thick and heavy in the air you breathe, they at last awaken you; which is indirectly receiving a thought call from other human beings to get up, and not from god.) As you receive the first message notifying you that you are alive and well,

Digitized by Google

you become the creator of a new thought, in which case you are the entire creator, judge, and adjuster. As a creator of a new thought in response to the first message you received, you create a thought whether you should get up and dress, or whether you should remain in bed for a while longer. If you have judged or decided to stay in bed for a longer while, you reject all other thoughts coming your way, but you hold on and make use of the very thought that you created all by yourself, which was to remain in bed. So you are now a creator and a rejector of thought. After a while, thinking that it is time for you to get up, you become a recaller of thought. You recall the first thought about getting up, and you make use of that thought. As soon as you have recalled it, you take the same recalling thought and you change it into a sending thought, and as such you send the thought down through your entire body that it is your desire to get up and dress. As your body receives the order, it begins to move up out of bed, dresses, and obeys the entire order of your own created sent thought. You are now a receiver, creator, rejector, recaller, changer, sender, and Judge of thoughts. After being dressed, you naturally create other new thoughts, and your body obeys them all, one after another, all day long, year in and year out.

What happens to yourself happens to other people. What your body is doing for you in acting, moving, and obeying your orders through the brain's thoughts, bodies of other people do the same for them. People coming in contact with you in conversation, in business, or in work, exchange and interchange thoughts with you, and this constantly causes new ideas and thoughts to be created, appear, and spread.

Therefore, all work in the world, from the baking of bread to making an elephant walk on a barrel, including all building, is done through human thought first, last, and always so.

Digitized by Google

If you are a good, systematic, and sincere thinker, you will always lay out your rules and plans about a day ahead, and in some few instances, a year or a few years ahead of time, and see to it that your thoughts are carried out slowly, surely, and gradually through action. Pay no attention to a little trouble or mishappening that may fall in between time, but always remember to create, hold, and use all good thoughts to and for yourself, and always to reject thoughts that are not of a pleasant kind away from you.

I have originated, formed, and combined the following six rules of words upon thoughts. These rules or thoughts will always protect and guide you successfully away from all harmful thoughts, deeds, and ideas, if you make use of them as you need them. Try to get the six words or thoughts into your brain and to remember them quickly and always.

How to Practice and Remember the Six Rules on Thought

Always be able to RECEIVE a Thought or Message intelligently
Always be able to REJECT a Thought or Message quickly
Always be able to RECALL a Thought or Message instantly
Always be able to CREATE a Thought or Message intelligently
Always be able to SEND a Thought or Message intelligently
Always be able to CHANGE a Thought or Several thoughts in various ways, so they may work out intelligently for your benefit and satisfaction.

Know also that Thought Positive has, in itself, two ways of operation, namely: positive and negative. As for instance, a man may make good resolutions and plans to accomplish a certain work or a good deed, but instead of getting to work on it he keeps putting it off from time to time. This person acts in the negative form of thought positive; in other words, he accomplishes no

Digitized by Google

harm and no good. Thought Negative also has, in itself two ways of operation, namely: positive and negative. As for instance, a bad person decides to steal something from another person. Before he really does anything in the matter, he is acting on the negative side of thought negative, which means he is still honest and actionless. But the moment he commits the theft he has acted under the positive form of negative thought. From this form of positive-negative thought and action comes our crops of thieves, highwaymen, murderers, militant suffragettes, Black Hands, bomb-throwers, safe-blowers, robbers, etc.

Thought Negative

HOW NOT TO THINK WRONG

So far, I have been directing you on good thinking or on thought positive, with but a touch here and there on the negative way of thought. I presume you are anxious to learn or know something about the bad side of thought, too; and that is correct. For all good things have badness mixed in with them, while all bad things contain at times a trifle good, or are worse than bad. Each person must learn to know and understand the bad and negative side of things as well as the good side. When you learn to understand and know your enemy, you have a chance to prepare for self-protection and preservation, thereby working out the good and best from everything, bad or good.

I have told you at the beginning of the article on thought that thinking in the right or positive way means breathing air into your brain, and with it creating good, clean, and happy thoughts, and to reject all others. I also told you that breath means life to the body, and that thoughts from all other people in the world are

Digitized by Google

mixed in the air as you breathe; and it is for this reason you are obliged to think constantly, even against your own will. Now, if this is true on the positive side, and it is, thought negative then, ought to make a person stop thinking altogether, and it does, as after death; and all negative thinkers must die. However, I am going to give you a lesson in negative thought, that you, through it, will create life and strength, and not die.

To stop thinking and yet to be alive, all you have to do is to stop breathing for as long a time as you can hold off. In other words, when the poisoned air leaves your nostrils, stop and do not draw in a new supply of air. Your brain, not receiving any air to work on or with, at once becomes numb and thoughtless. This will last a short time only, on account of the stored and reserved air which is always inside of the body to protect it against instant destruction in case of accident. The reserve air will commence to force its way up to and through the brain to awaken it, and really means a call for help. The air will then continue to force itself through and down from the brain into your nostrils and out of your nose, in which case you will be obliged to yield. An immediate inrush of new air will force itself into your nose, and order will be restored again throughout your body. An exercise of this kind is good for anybody, because it is the negative form of life, and since it is harder on the body and brain than the natural way of breathing and thinking, it strengthens the brain and body by the reverse method or change that is forced upon it. The brain becomes better the more you use it and the harder you use it; in the same way as a smith, through much hammering, makes steel better. The longer time you are able to keep from breathing air, the better and stronger will your brain and body become. These exercises are easy, and you can undertake them once or twice a week. You will discover that this method is of great benefit in helping you become the overlord of

Digitized by Google

your brain and body, and through it, the rejecting of useless thoughts will be obeyed by your body and brain instantly or as fast as you direct the orders to them.

You recollect me telling you that all good things and deeds have been accomplished through good thoughts, while bad and negative thoughts are the cause of all mistakes, troubles, fear, ignorance, praying, hate, selfishness, drinking, jealousy, and vulgarity, all of which result in death and destruction. Then know, that a thought of an ill and bad nature, created and sent out, harms the individual and humanity in the very same manner as a good thought, does good. If twisted, a right and good thought will change into a bad, deceiving, and wrong thought.

Ill, weak, fear, foolish, wrong, senseless, deceiving, dreaming, imagining, and proofless thoughts should never be entertained; neither should they be created or sent out of the brain, if only for the fun of it; for all such thoughts always return back to the sender, and harm him more than anyone else. Of course, such thoughts, being spread in the air, naturally hurt other people, too; for if a person, not understanding the science of true thinking, is not able to force away ill or foolish thoughts which lodge in his brain, it causes him to get into all kinds of trouble because a weak thinker generally allows his body to act under any old wild or foolish thought that happens to enter his brain. This is why we have so many troublesome people in the world. The human race has a number of names created for this class of people. The preachers have named them, sinners, but the preachers themselves are the very ones who help the people get into sins, so they can come back at them for a little more change. The Christian Scientists have named them error-doers. But they, too, charge so much for an error-lesson, or pass around a box with a strong iron lock on it in error, for dollars and change, as I have noticed them do during

Digitized by Google

service. (Yet the Christian Scientists claim there is nothing in matter, and the preachers tell us how rich god is, but neither of them seem to be gathering any dollars nor even a little change from him! Do they?) The truth of the matter is, that it is not so much the fault of the ones who receive ill and foolish thoughts, as it is of those who create and send them out. It does not take a great mathematician to figure out how many ill and senseless thoughts are created in an hour or in a day throughout the world. They will, however, run into the billions daily, and many of them do bear fruit, as you notice.

The preachers should really have been the true teachers of humanity on all good subjects, but they themselves have chosen the negative, wrong, and lazy road. It seems that the preachers have taken the word teach, and twisted it around in the very manner they wear their collars! When you pronounce the word teach, twisted or backwards, you will discover that it says cheat; and that is what a preacher is and does. I am just wondering whether the word dog was not twisted around by some pirate of a preacher, and continues to cheat many people with it still! It appears to be a fact, that as long as the preachers are furnished with enough food, drink, clothes, long robes, plenty of pocket money, and other good things too good to mention, they care very little what happens to you, me, or to the people who do the furnishing of those things. And it seems to be a fact also, that as long as they do not have to work for the long robes under which they cover up a great deal of mischief, falsehoods, and lies, they never will care! It is an old custom of preachers and rabbis to create and force fear and scare thoughts upon grown people, the same as grown people force false fear thoughts upon children. Such ideas are weak, childish, and disgraceful, and should not be tolerated at all. The churches and synagogues are nothing more than plants in which

Digitized by Google

ignorance, fear, and death thoughts are created and manufactured. Therefore, the proper name for the church, is Scare Factory!

False thoughts, which are created by weak-minded men and women, cause false acting and false building. Such work is useless and destructive to self, others, everything, and all.

False thoughts are the direct cause of fear thoughts, for fear means doubt, and where there is doubt there is no surety for safety.

Upon false thoughts you cannot build, for falsehood means weakness or a total lack of foundation, and therefore cannot hold.

Combine the false and fear thoughts together, and you have a new creation which reads ignorance. Ignorance means not knowing or not truly understanding, and as such, it causes the acting and building of everything wrong; which always must and does fall.

Put the three bad thoughts, false, fear, and ignorance, together, and you again have a new creation that reads DEATH; which is our punishment for wrong and false thinking, acting, and building.

Bad thoughts move and travel in the air the same as good thoughts do, for it is the only place or space it has to move or exist in. A Marconi wireless operator of a traveling ship out on the ocean suddenly picks up from the air, amongst many good messages, a bad one informing him that a sister ship is in distress. This proves that good and bad news fly in the air together. Thoughts do the same. Bad thoughts, too, penetrate through walls and buildings, the same as good thoughts do. You may note that when a sweet friend of yours, for some reason or other, suddenly changes his or her opinion about you and starts to think or speak ill of you, the ill thoughts will reach you through air, as fast as your would-be friend creates such thoughts or words, no matter how far away he or she may be. You at once

Digitized by Google

become aware of the fact, and you protect yourself accordingly. The above illustration is a true one and happens to nearly everybody in the world. It is therefore sufficient proof that bad thoughts move, act, and have a force amongst the human race, the same as good thoughts do and have. Bad thoughts created or entertained, build bad bodies and bad things in the same way as good thoughts build good things and good bodies. Thoughts, when arrested and held in the brain with a selfish feeling, as in drink, religion, or vulgarity, become a poison; and its action causes sickness, weakness, troubles, to that body and everybody else surrounding it, and finally destruction.

When a person creates and sends out ill, foolish, vulgar, and useless thoughts, he knows them to be so at the time he creates them and does the sending; understanding that he himself would not like to receive or entertain such thoughts nor to act under such influence; also knowing well enough that he is doing wrong, and feels it. Such wrong thoughts, therefore, do not make as strong an effect during their travel in the universe as good thoughts do. It is for this reason that one good and pure thought, sent out by a good person, has the power of smashing to pieces many thoughts of a vulgar, weak, or foolish kind that are sent out by a bad male or female. A person who creates, entertains, and sends out vulgar, weak, and foolish thoughts receives back instantly for self-use the same goods in the very same style created; and such person, or that class of people, you will always find in trouble, in jail, and finally in a grave.

Have you ever noticed when you feel good and happy, how a thought of a melancholy or fearing nature will suddenly come to you, and your entire body and self immediately changes from a joyful into a sorrowful, ill, and unhappy feeling? The reason for the change is this. A neighbor, person, or number of persons in your city, town, or place, or in some far off country

Digitized by Google

is perhaps creating ill and troublesome thoughts. He may do that with himself or he may be quarreling with his family, friends, or others. Those ill-feeling thoughts, when they leave the troubled party or parties, take a flight out into the universe, as you now understand, and the wind and air will sometimes force that very same ill thought right into the very surroundings you sit or stand in. As you breathe in this ill thought, and as soon as it strikes your brain, your whole body is at once changed from a happy state into an unhappy state of feeling, the same as it would change in feeling if you tasted vinegar after eating honey. You must therefore be wise enough to reject all wrong, ill, foolish, and troublesome thoughts of other people's making, for such thoughts are not directly intended for you at all. The above illustration demonstrates the true fact that ill thoughts, created by others, work harm toward you or me. You must therefore know and understand that thoughts of a useless, ill, or foolish nature, created or entertained by you or me, would work harm against others also, because thoughts like everything else in the universe work forth and back always.

All life and thoughts that are made and created from moment to moment for the body, is done with a bit of air entering through your nose, as you now understand; and all exhaling of poisonous air and poisonous thoughts from the body, therefore, must also be done through your nose. In other words make your nose the outlet, and through it force or blow out all ill or poisonous thoughts as they happen to stray into your brain from time to time. This you will only have to do for a few months, or, until you learn to become an expert thinker. As an expert thinker you will at all times be able to take into your brain air with good or bad thoughts mixed together, and immediately change them into the sweetest and best thoughts you care to create. You will be able to do this or rather your brain will be able to

Digitized by Google

do this for you without much attention on your part, for it will have become a second nature to the brain to always act so if you will but gradually insist and train her into the work and make her act so.

To train your brain into right thinking is like acquiring any other trade or profession; it must be learned gradually and persistently. Note how a juggler through his brain first learns and practices his tricks gradually and persistently, and after a while becomes an expert at them, and his body can play with five balls in the air just as easily as you or I with one. Other acting, dressmaking, tailoring, piano playing, typewriting, engineering, and all other trades, professions, and things are learned and acquired likewise. With thought it is the same.

The person who allows his brain to entertain useless, vulgar, and foolish thoughts causes the body to imbibe, live, and grow in that grade, and to describe her entire inside contents upon the face of the individual. As we walk in the street, better thinkers and livers than we are, are able to read our inside life history as it is modeled out upon our faces. Powder, paint, praying, or church-going cannot cover up nor improve this condition, but adds more faults to it. It costs no more to breathe air and create ideal thoughts that build an ideal body, than it does to create weak, ignorant, and false thoughts which continue to build a bad body. The ideal way is the only true and natural way. A person entertaining kind and ideal thoughts causes the body to grow so, and the inside good, too, becomes visible upon the face; and such person is the clean-natural-rose of the human race.

If all the people in the world were to do away with all the useless, foolish, and weak thoughts or ideas on a certain date, and start with a few simple and clean thoughts, this world would in five years time become a paradise to live and exist in. This would be the saner

Digitized by Google

and safer method than that of looking or hunting for one after getting into a grave!

Learn to be as good a thinker as you can, and you will become as one of the best the world has. When you have learned the art of correct thinking, also understanding weak and wrong thinking, you will be able to protect yourself against all harm and useless schemers, such as astrologers, fake fortune-tellers, telepathists, theosophists, the pope, rabbis, ministers, theologists, christian-wrong-scientists, spiritualists, and preachers, for you will then know that these schemers have nothing of value to offer, neither would they give away anything of value if they had any, for they themselves could use it and would. You will further know that these schemers simply get up some strange word or words which have nothing behind them, and with them, not only mislead millions and millions of the best people of the world including even the crowned heads of Europe, but actually help them all to the road of quick death! Know, therefore, that you now know more truth than all these schemers ever did. Should they buy a copy of this book and read or study it, they will know no more than you already know. So be wise and careful!

To-day, as in the days of old, it is the true, liberal, free-thought-creating thinkers who are causing the accomplishment and upbuilding of all improvements, works, deeds, arts, and acts, that humanity is enjoying. In the days of old, when ignorance, savagery, and superstition ruled, the clear and free thinkers were few and far between, but at the present day, with freedom of thought throughout the United States, as well as in many parts of Europe, we ought to accomplish more and greater good in improvements mechanically and physically, than we ever did in the history of the world. We now know that it is just as easy and even easier and much better to think good, to work good; to think life, to act life; to think real, and to act real, than to do

Digitized by Google

heaven-dreaming, dreaming of god, or hell-dreaming, which are not real.

In order that you may become a good, clear, and self-efficient thinker, learn to operate your own brain by yourself in the same way as a wireless telegraph operator runs and operates his own instrument. After practicing for a while how to think right, you will discover that you are a perfect operator of your own brain and mind, and you can grant your own self a diploma as being such. You will also find that you will afterwards be able to sail along in life and make life a continuous enjoyment to yourself and all.

Remember that your brain is the apparatus with which you create, receive, reject, recall, send, and change all thoughts. The brain is your thought-making instrument the same as a wireless instrument is a maker, sender, and receiver of news and messages in the hands of a wireless operator. Also remember, that a thought acts throughout the universe, the same as a ball when thrown high into the air will always come back to its maker and affinity-earth; in your case the thought comes back to your brain. The same thing happens to all other people who think and live in the world; not in graves.

Pay no attention whatever to night dreams for they mean and are absolutely nothing. Most dreams are simply thoughts straying in the air, created by people who are awake while you are asleep. This is a negative dream. A positive dream means your own past working in your brain as you sleep; and, as most of your own past is always recorded in your brain, you must therefore never waste a moment's thought upon night dreams, but always reject and force them away from you as fast as you think of them. If you do not allow yourself to think about dreams of any kind, they will not exist for you nor bother you. Therefore, forget dreams and false and useless imaginations of all kinds.

Digitized by Google

In closing this part on thought,* I wish to state that the illustrations I have given you on positive and negative thought ought to and must make an expert thinker of you. I also desire to call your attention again, never to forget the main key on thought or how to think right, which is as you perhaps already remember: to always intelligently

RECEIVE	CREATE
REJECT	SEND
RECALL	CHANGE

THOUGHTS.

*Within the next few years I will have a perfect teaching method ready for both private and public schools. The system will be the best EVER, and none better NEVER.

Digitized by Google

PART EIGHT

THE HUMAN BODY

How Original Human Bodies Develop and Grow into the World.

THE human being or human body, being greater than an image of nature, and operating more wonderfully than nature, is composed of matter, the body, and air, the no-thing we breathe. But before explaining to you the wonder of your own body and how to run it by yourself, I am obliged to talk to you on bodies in general; for the broader a knowledge is spread for the brain on a subject, the better and easier is it for the brain to give you ideal results. In other words, in order to make a success of things in general, we must understand all things natural; and when we do understand things natural, we are then working, moving, and reaching perfection—mentally, physically, and financially.

Most of the so-called civilized people we meet on the street, in a saloon, or in a church, in reply to the question as to who made us, and how we came about, will say that god made us. They will also tell us that the same god told the preachers to instruct us that we must all pray to him, and the more and longer we pray, the quicker will he kill us or turn us into spirits or nothing; this, mind you, after having gone through so much trouble in making us. The preachers also claim to have a covenant or written agreement with god, as to what he is or is not going to do to us after we are dead and buried or cremated. But for some reason or other, the preachers have never been able to show us

Digitized by Google

this covenant, neither will they let us see his signature. When we ask our folks how we came about, they also tell us that god made us. The Japanese have sense enough to tell their children the entire truth about the matter, and that is the reason, I presume, why the Japanese people are able to do all general work in a more truthful and better way than we are doing. When we ask our folks whether they ever saw god or whether their grandparents ever saw god, they tell us, no. What they do tell us is this. God was once in some unknown paradise and made Adam and Eve. He then came back to do business with Moses, afterwards sending Jesus, and thousands of years have now passed and nothing more has been heard or seen of god. It would seem reasonable to assume that if god ever did any business with Moses and tramping with him in a wilderness, he would at this day visit Mr. Marconi, or have a little chat with our Mr. Edison. I am sure that Mr. Edison would take god out for au automobile ride, and that would be more pleasure for god than tramping in the wilderness with Moses, and teaching Moses how to be a magician in dirty things such as bugs and frogs, or for god to be chasing around in a burning bush to get burned in. The fact is, Mr. Edison can show god creations and inventions that would make god feel ashamed of himself and make him look like 7c.

When I read the bible (although the translation from the original Hebrew into English is weakly made) I find the statement that god worked five days in creating and making the earth, heaven, and hosts of other things. On the sixth day he made a man, Adam. But when I read Genesis 1.26 "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness:" it at once shows that the preachers and our folks have never as yet been able to learn how to read or understand the bible. The above verse tells us that god was having a little conversation or a meeting with somebody before he undertook the

Digitized by Google

making of Adam or the first person in the world! Of course, the bible does not have to give the party's name, so we do not find any name, neither do we know who the party was with whom god was talking in reference to the making and designing of Adam! After god makes Adam he is not satisfied to leave Adam enjoy paradise to himself, but starts to plan how to make Eve or a woman for him, so as to get poor Adam into trouble! Although god made himself, the earth, universe, and Adam in six days, yet, when the same god came to making a woman, which is not as difficult as making himself, a universe, or a man, the dust or dirt went on a strike and refused to work! In other words the sand which god created, did not want to work any more or to allow a woman to be made out of itself! It is strange indeed when a little dust can go on a strike against a creator and maker of all things! God, however, was obliged to put Adam to sleep, or to hypnotize him, and rob the poor fellow of a rib in order to make a woman for him. I presume this is the reason suffragettes now-a-days seem to think that they, too, can hypnotize men by first getting the vote and then have the men vote them into political positions and afterwards rob the men of their jobs, money, power, guns, and life! However, not all men allow themselves to be hypnotized by women, or other things.

After god was through making all things that pleased or did not please him, it reads in Genesis 2.2 "And on the seventh day God finished his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work," meaning the sabbath, of course. And yet, we find everything moving, working, and growing every day the same as on the sabbath, Sunday, or any other day. Did god, too, become an infidel? Well, it appears so! Will anyone please tell me which is god's seventh day? The preachers will tell me a lie, and I give it up. If you travel from San Francisco to Japan, you natural-

Digitized by Google

ly lose even man's made sabbath, because a whole day is lost out of the calendar on the trip, the same as an hour of time is either lost or gained while traveling between New York and Chicago; and instead of landing in Japan on the supposed holy sabbath, you arrive a day later. So where is our supposed sabbath! Where are we at! Whom are we fooling!

It further states in the bible that after god had finished creating all things, he gives orders to Adam and Eve not to eat the fruit of a certain tree. But you know, a woman will never keep a promise, a secret, or a warning; and she did eat. Note though, how weak and mean god was, by not coming in in time to stop Eve from eating the fruit, but deliberately letting her eat it first, then marching in and saying, "Hast thou eaten of the tree thou shouldest not eat?" Now, would you be so mean if you were a creator or god? Of course not!

If it were a fact that there ever was a god, and he first created dust, and from dust, Adam, why could he not make Eve out of dust also? If it were a fact that there ever was a creator, why did he cause fruit to grow that Adam and Eve should not eat? If it were a fact that there ever was a creator, and that he made himself, the universe, sun, moon, stars, sea-lions, elephants, trees, and all other things in six days, why could he not make Eve as perfect and as strong as Adam? If a creator why was he not able to know beforehand, what harm an insignificant serpent, which he himself had created, might do? Does this not prove that god was of no good as a creator and god at all! Does it not prove positively that he was planning, brewing, and weaving trouble from the very moment he was supposed to have been a creator and god! A funny creator and god, is it not? The fault for creating and getting all things into trouble, as far as I or anybody else can see, is nobody's but god's. And mind you,

Digitized by Google

after god deliberately makes and causes all trouble himself, he curses Adam and Eve, and kicks them out of paradise; and here we are to-day, all by our happy selves! If people read the bible, and allow themselves to imagine that there is a god, then the whole blame for our troubles must be laid and charged up against that same god. Yet refined men and women waste time, money, and energy in building churches, thanking and praying to a weak and trouble-making god, just to keep passing the lie around, from one generation to another, and spoiling as well as killing themselves and their own children thereby. Oh, how long, yes, how long more shall you yourselves deceive; and will you be deceived!

You recollect me telling you that ancient history goes back very far in years, but that it was not until the Hebrews invented and completed their alphabet and language that history writing was made possible. It is therefore the ancient Hebrews who first started to write history and conceived the idea of making a calendar, and of keeping a record of years and of things for the benefit of humanity. The word Adam was an idea for the first time in the history of the world written into the bible or book referring to and for the benefit of a male human being, and does not mean, as people imagine, a first human being created by god, because there were billions of people before the bible was ever originated. People until that time did not know how to write, or else were too lazy to invent writing, or were too lazy in caring or desiring to write about themselves or things. The Jewish Calendar shows at my present writing, five thousand, six hundred and seventy-three years, while the Christian Calendar shows nineteen hundred and thirteen years. There were many more Gentiles, twenty, ten, or three thousand years ago, than there were Jewish or Hebrew people; but the Gentiles or Christians, for some reason or other, did not keep any record of

Digitized by Google

themselves, just as the Indian or the negro race keeps no record of itself. This simply goes to show that the Gentiles' mode of living for thousands of years has had a lazy tendency; and, of course, laziness keeps all work, knowledge, and progress in the world, back; and blind nature always kills the ones who are lazy. Jesus finally came or was made, and stirred up the Gentiles a bit, and they, too, started to make history, which helped them move upwards greatly within the last few hundred years. But note also, that Jesus, too, was a Jew, or supposed to have been such!

As we are the highest understanding beings and things in the universe, we therefore cannot expect anyone or anything to come and tell us what happened to us years ago, or how we came about, because it would at once lower our standard and raise the other thing above us! We, as the only things in the universe able to think future, past, and present, are therefore able to discover the mysteries of all things and in all things by ourselves, present or past. You now understand that god could not make Adam or a first person, because god would first have to create himself out of some sort of material or spirit, which material or spirit would not be an original god at all, therefore no god never!

Now let us look into natural things and see how an original or a first human body in the world was and is made, or how blind and wild nature creates one without parents, married people, or even laboratories. People tell me that Darwin claims we evoluted from the monkey, which may or may not be so. I never read Darwin, so I cannot say much for or against his theory. I will admit however, that a much truer and better race of human beings will be the result through that teaching, than will ever be developed through the preachers' cheating idea that god made us, and no one to tell or explain to us who made god and how he came about

Digitized by Google

first. You recollect me telling you that the ocean grows fish, salt, sand, vegetation, and amphibious animals. Amphibious animals live and exist part of the time in the ocean and part of the time on land. On the other hand, the earth creates and grows animals that live part of the time on land and part of the time in water. Between the occasional interchange and exchange of these extreme animals the human being is the happening or the accident, and as such it causes him to assume an entirely different posture from that of animals, that is, walking erect with head up, while all other animals walk horizontally with head downwards toward the earth. No doubt the African hippopotamus and some land animal were the cause of the negro. Note the facial resemblance. Also know that the African hippopotamus is a great eater, and the negro the same.

Blind nature has still another method of creating an original human body without parents, or married people. Since you now understand the idea of oxygen, hydrogen, and other atoms, you can readily see that a dead animal carcass causing the gathering of atoms, or an animal losing its seed, and the rain coming down on it would cause a new combination of elements, and a certain heat, place, and atmosphere would grow or change such into a new creation, and the result would be a male and female growing right through the sand and moving away when capable. Nature always throws out or creates male and female at one time, because nature operates positively and negatively at the same instant in all things. The male is the positive creation, and the female, the negative. A woman in this respect sometimes imitates nature by giving birth to twins, one being a boy, and the other, a girl. A woman is never a creator of a man or male body, but only a bearer of one. A male is always the creator of another male, and he can use an incubator for the developing of same. A male can create or cause the creation of both male and

Digitized by Google

female, but female, only female. This is because from the highest all lower grades can be made or had, but from a lower grade nothing higher can be attained unless mixed with a higher grade; and even then it is not the highest and can never be made so.

To show that moving life is possible from decayed matter, fresh matter, or various atoms, all you have to do is to get some honey or molasses, drop a few crumbs of rye bread into it, and in a few days you will have a number of little ants moving, crawling and working happily around in the honey. Cut up some fresh fruit and vegetables, place it in a clean room, and in a few days you will have live flies and worms. If you want to create bees, you do not have to wait for god to make them; the decaying of the carcass of a dead calf will make you plenty of bees. This proves to you that movable life from matter is no mystery at all. It is as old as the hills. The above illustrations also demonstrate once and forever that it is always the original body or the chicken first, and the egg comes afterwards, and the same rule applies to the human being and all other things in the universe.

If all the people of the North and South American continents were to move to Europe for five years, they would find on their return to America, a great number of young children scattered throughout the land. Of course, they would not be quite as good looking, perhaps, as the white children, but they would be the best that wild nature could throw out blindly and unintelligently. Nature, as blind as she is, never sleeps. She is at work at all things anywheres, everywheres, and at all times.

I am going to cite you a fact which will convince you once and forever, that people grow into the world just the same as any other animal, insect, tree, or matter does; without god or parents. Just look back a little to the time when Columbus discovered and landed in America. He had no expectations, whatever, of finding

Digitized by Google

people there, but he did find a people who are known as Indians. Is this not positive proof that the first pairs of little Indians originated from atoms and grew through the sand or earth, or else originated from the animals there! Of course, the tribes Columbus found were in an uncultivated, rough, and savage state. But to-day there are some Indians who are as intelligent as white people, and in some cases even more so. Some of them have been through college and have made as good records as the white students have. This is because they learned to imitate other and better ideas of better thinking men.

Here are some solid facts to bear in mind as they are at the present day. History writing of the human race was originally started by the ancient Hebrews through the torah or bible about six thousand years ago. The places referred to in the bible were and still are named Babylon, Jerusalem, and Egypt. No mechanical inventions of any value were made in olden days because the preachers did not allow the human race to advance mentally. The preachers always were and still are in the dark hope that something like a word "god" is going to come and pick us all off the earth, and take us up to live above the sun or in some soft clouds, or perhaps let us live under wings as some foolish women imagine, just because they happen to see a hen act so. It took Columbus seventy-one days to sail from Europe across the Atlantic Ocean to land on a continent which is known as America. It would have taken Columbus about three years time or more, at the rate he was traveling across the Atlantic, to make the trip around the Pacific Ocean. It is but a few hundred years since Columbus found the Indians, and they are just as good a people as other people are. The Indians and negroes have no bible at all. It seems that god never visited them to give them one or to make one for them. Our Old and New Testaments do not mention one word about

Digitized by Google

the Indian or negro; and as all these people are as yet in the rough and making, does it not show and positively prove that the preachers, god, women, and weak-minded men are caught at their own lies again! Is this not sufficient proof to any sensible man, woman, pope, rabbi, preacher and minister that god never made them, nor us! The fact is, god never made A Man nor A-men! The above illustrations once and forever disprove the foolish idea that if it were not for woman, or god, we could not have children.

From what I have said thus far, you must understand that we are an accident in the universe just as all other things are, and we are here because we are here. It is but recently that an original and new type of a human being was found in the Arctic regions known as the "Blond Eskimo," and since god was not found there making him, it absolutely proves that we are not a preplanned or prechosen creation as foolish people imagine. If the human race has grown to a better understanding of itself and of wild nature, it is solely through its own efforts. It is we individually and as a whole who will have to do all the changing of ways, ideas, thoughts, and actions for the better life if we desire it. Nature cannot do this for us; neither can she bother with us after we are once created because she cannot and does not understand the difference between an ant, cat, horse, elephant, woman, rabbi, pope, preacher, church, humanity, myself, or a chunk of coal. Since blind nature cannot understand nor remember us, she therefore cannot take us back into a past or put us forward into a future. It is only fools who waste time on past or future thoughts which cannot do them any good. The wise let the paper calendar do all the worrying about a past or future. The calendar is peaceful, makes no noise, the cost of one is almost nothing, and it is the cheapest and best way to dispose onto and get rid of all our ignorant troubles.

Digitized by Google

I shall now show you how children can be made scientifically in laboratories, or in other words, how a human being can imitate nature and even improve over her. Take a dry and warm or hot glass from a warm room and walk with it into a cold room, and you will at once have a few atoms of nitrogen and oxygen or water inside the glass. The same thing would happen if you took a dry and cold glass out of a cold atmosphere and walked with it into a warm room. Anatomy tells us that we, as human beings, originate at the moment of creation from a very small tiny atom or germ, invisible to the eye. You now understand that all atoms of matter must first go through the process of being born or originated from air and then through water. You will readily comprehend that by gathering some drops of water in a glass from the air and putting it into a certain temperature, the water will finally turn into albumin or germy matter. If albumin is kept at a certain grade of heat for so many hours, you will have a new formation or creation of living germs; and if you know how, you can cause those germs to grow into rats, cats, dogs, elephants, or human beings, the same as Mr. Burbank, through a similar method, has caused original kinds of flowers and vegetation to appear, that nature cannot do. You can therefore see that we need no gods to make us; not even parents. Laboratories could turn out children as plentiful as incubators turn out chickens. But as the human race is simply killing itself to beat nature out of the job, it is best to let them have their own way about the matter.

The difference in color of the human race is as natural as any other material thing in the world. Extreme distance from one place to another on the earth, and atmospheric variations cause and make different colors in matter, just as the orange in California bears a different color to the orange in Florida. South Africa, being a very hot country, causes flesh to be black in

Digitized by Google

color. The negro, therefore, is a black human being; and the first few pairs of little negroes also grew without god, the same as any other white human being. A long distance away, we find the yellow people or Chinese. In the extreme north, we find a cold climate which causes some things to appear white in color. There we have ice and snow, the white polar bear, once white eskimos, and next to them we have the white Norwegian and Swedish race. In between the two extremes, of which the coldness of one causes the color, white, and the heat of the other, black, we come in. We call ourselves the white race, but in reality we are neither white, red, black, nor green, but simply a mixture of every and all things, which mixture in turn causes us to be the most intelligent of and above all things.

Since a human being is the accident from the highest types of animals or atom substances, it causes him to become the leader of all other animals and things in the world. Since he walks straight and erect, it causes him to acquire intelligence which no other thing in the universe possesses. It is for these reasons that he becomes an image of nature and even above it, providing he develops his latent intelligence.

The human body, like the world, is composed of about eighty per cent. water, and the rest a matter composition of bone, flesh, salt, and any and all chemicals that exist in the air, earth, and universe. In other words, we, as human beings, have inside of us small proportions of all other things and elements in the universe, else we would not be able to name or understand them. Containing as we do, a little of all other things, it causes us to understand and comprehend all other things below us, above us, everywheres, nowheres, and endless so. In fact, it makes us the kings and lords over and above any and all things. Because we do contain a little of everything, it enables us to consciously or unconsciously imitate the noise, sounds, actions and movements of all

Digitized by Google

other things in the universe including animals. Some human beings unconsciously move their feet while walking, in the same awkward manner as the elephant does. A human being lays out flat when he sleeps in the same manner as a fish does in water. An acrobat will do more wonderful stunts than all the animals in the world put together. His tumbling and jumping, which keeps him off the floor for some moments, imitates the movements of the earth's revolving in the air. A person going up in a balloon, coming down in a parachute, and landing safely, imitates the bird. Other men will imitate the noise and sound of wind and nearly all animals in existence. Note the great power and understanding of man's intelligence in subduing and conquering all other things like air, electricity, matter and animals, regardless of size, weight, and shape. Note how two or three small-sized men will lead a dozen elephants through the streets of a city peacefully.

In the month of June, 1912, a monster fish was captured in the neighborhood of Knights Key, Florida. It took five harpoons and one hundred fifty-one bullets to subdue the monster; it smashed a boat into thousands of pieces; knocked the rudder and propeller off a thirty-one ton yacht; and took five days to finally kill it. The monster weighed thirty thousand pounds; its mouth was thirty-eight inches wide; had several thousand teeth; the liver weighed seventeen hundred pounds; it had swallowed an animal weighing fifteen hundred pounds, for a meal, I presume; and yet, in spite of the enormous power it possessed, men got it after they once started after it. This shows that man, although small in size but big in intelligence, is the king and lord over everything on top and beneath the earth, and soon will become so in the air, too; in fact is so already.

Since you now understand about bodies in general, I will show you how to run your own body by yourself, without god, pray, fear, trouble, or doctors. Our bodies

Digitized by Google

when we are born, are either whole and complete, or else diseased or deformed. That is the way nature grows and makes things. If you are born whole, you need not fear anything or anybody in this world or universe. Just so long as you do not interfere in a wrong way with anybody or anything else, nothing will interfere with you. If your parents have been or are diseased, it is no harm to you, because you are produced by nature through a separate seed all to yourself, the same as an individual fruit tree is produced through a separate seed. Know that as a thing, we are produced from the best and highest grade of atom substances known in the universe; for if there were anything higher or better than we are, we would soon discover, know, and handle it, even if it did not understand English, French, or German.

When you are born, there is a rope attached to you which supplied you with air and life until you were born. After birth you commence to breathe regular air and to move, live, and grow in the real world; and remember there are no other worlds for you or me, but this world. The machinery inside of you runs and continues to work as you grow, in a similar style as the running movement inside a watch does; but your whole body,including the inside machinery, operates perpetually, imitating the working and moving of the earth and universe.

As you grow into childhood, you commence to show your powers in imitating nature; in fact, you are able to beat nature in any and all movements. It takes the earth about twenty-four hours before she makes one revolution; you can turn your entire body around in a second. It takes the ocean and earth six or eight hours to breathe, which we call high and low tide; you and your body breathes every few seconds. The universe and the earth work and are forced to work and move constantly and unceasingly without a rest for even one

Digitized by Google

moment; you and your body (although constantly working inside of you) is able and has the privilege of sitting, standing, stopping, talking, lying down, resting, and sleeping. This gives you a greater advantage and more power, and you are therefore a more perfect thing than any other thing in the universe, except other intelligent human beings, of course. Some parts of your body, like the Equator, are always hot, and other parts, like the North and South Poles, are always cold. Again, your body as a whole changes in temperature like nature's atmosphere; as for instance, cold-warm-hot, hot-warm-cold. After your body reaches maturity, it commences to renew itself slowly but perpetually, and new flesh, eyes, nerves, and all other substances constantly grow and change themselves; except your bones which are like rock and need very little change. If you once get to know and understand the wonders inside of you and about you, you will in a few months be able to advance and change yourself into a better and greater person, and yet it will be the same you!

Just as the earth is constantly making and absorbing air, so you, too, constantly absorb fresh air and exhale poisoned air. Just as the earth is constantly growing things in a wild state, except when man plants cultivated seed, so does your body, too, constantly regrow itself wildly, unless you understand how to cultivate it intelligently. Just as the earth is constantly taking in and growing out bad and good things, so does your body, too, constantly take in food, water, and air, and grow out a good body as well as poisoned water and waste. Just as everything the earth is perpetually throwing out returns to her in changed form and is regrown, so does everything that human beings and animals throw out, return to the human being for reconsumption. Since your body is constantly imitating nature's actions, it will, under certain conditions, keep up the imitation as long as nature lasts; and that

Digitized by Google

is forever, because nature knows no years, months, days, hours, minutes, nor time. Time was invented by man for his convenience, but there is no time in connection with everlasting life on this earth, nature, or the universe, for it is the ever-present with these things and forever so. Since no sane person ever wants to die and since no sure time is known for death, for people die at the various ages of from one minute up to over one hundred years after birth, it therefore proves that there is no turning point in human life and that we can make ourselves live forever, in the same way as electricity is and will be produced perpetually and forever. There was as much electricity in the air ten thousand or a thousand years ago as there is now, but we had to wait until Mr. Edison came to tell us about it and show us how to draw it from the air cheaply. For the wireless telegraph we had to wait for Mr. Marconi, and with eternal life for the body it is the same, and in this book I am instructing you how to live eternally. The word, eternal, was not invented nor written into bibles or dictionaries by a dead body for the benefit of dead bodies, neither was the word invented by a live person for the benefit of dead bodies as the deceiving preachers would have us believe. Dead people never use words; nor nothing else!

Nature, as you now understand, works in all things in a positive and negative form, and the same rule applies to your body. Since you possess intelligence, you must learn to run your body instead of allowing your body to run you. In other words, commence to run your body in the positive and live way, instead of allowing your body to run you in the negative and destructive way. To become the overlord of your body and to run it without any trouble, give your body a standing order that from now on YOU-AIR, through the brain, are going to do the bossing and ordering as to food,

Digitized by Google

clothing, quality, quantity, pain, pleasure, desires, and all other things.

Your body being animal matter, like the earth, will desire and draw to itself more material things than are good for it, and if the body is supplied as fast as it demands, it will soon put itself out of service and go on the sick list, or perhaps die. A body is like a sack, which if stuffed too full will break, and in the case of the body, means sickness or death.

Know that your body carries within itself for its own protection, in the form of atom germs, at all times, a police force, laboratories, doctors, nurses, medicine, repair matter, scouts, assistants, generals, superintendents, lords, deities, kings, and any and all things that have been named or ever can be named by man. In case of accident or sickness, one or many atoms or germs inside your body will rush in to help out its neighbors and restore everything to a healthy condition, even giving up their lives for your benefit. This work goes on constantly in your body whether you are awake or asleep; whether you are aware of the fact or not. If you are not conscious of the fact, you are simply a follower or slave under blind nature. On the other hand, if you do arouse yourself and become conscious of the fact, then is the time when you really begin living in this world, for you then awaken your whole self and body to actual life realities.

Instruct your body that from now on she must obey all your orders, instead of foolishly demanding and dictating as had been her custom, and in a little time she will yield and change places with you; and YOU-AIR will become Lord, and your body the slave and servant. Let your body know that you are now wise to the fact that there is inside of her, at all times, more than plenty of good things to heal, regrow, repair, and operate herself; and with air, water, and a little food as a continual

Digitized by Google

fresh supply, she must heal, renew, repair, operate perfectly, and make good to you in any and all things all by herself, without bothering or troubling you with her affairs. To show you that your body, without your attention, carries inside of herself all the renewing supplies and repair material necessary, just note when you accidentally cut your finger, how the air and other atoms inside your body will rush in and stop the flow of blood, and heal and grow you new flesh including a new skin in a few days. Bone, if broken off, like broken rock, will not easily regrow itself after a certain age. Know, therefore, that all harm that is done to your body from without, as in accidents, or from within, as in pimples, boils, sores, sickness, and cuts, will always be healed and cured from within. This is all there is to the secret of body renewing and rebuilding which makes your body perpetually new. Note that when you overfeed or feed the wrong kind of food into the body, she will lay off sick for a week or so until she forces out her inside poisonous matter, which means and is, healing from within.

Life for the body is constantly created through three openings: they are the two nostrils and the mouth. Death is constantly created through two openings in the body; they are the two lower openings. The less you use the two lower openings, the longer do you stretch your own life existence. There are also three material parts in your body which are the vital parts that make and continue to run your entire body mechanically, and renew it materially. They are the brain, heart, and liver. All other parts of the body are not as important as the above mentioned parts. As for instance, a person, losing one or both arms in an accident, can live and get along fairly well without them. A person losing both arms and legs can also live, eat, think, and enjoy life without them as with them. Again, a person, losing one eye or both eyes, or both ears, can also exist, live, think, and enjoy life, as cripples do. Of course, it is

Digitized by Google

much handier to have all the limbs about us at all times. But nature works entirely different with us or upon the inside three parts of the body; because without a normal brain, we land in an insane asylum; without a liver, we soon die; and without a heart working, we are dead.

Now let me show you how these parts operate and work inside of you, and by understanding the operation of them you will have no trouble in taking care of yourself and body. You now know that it takes air to run a living body, and air runs a living body in this manner. As air enters through your nose, it causes and generates life to your brain the same as air currents enter into an electric motor, causing it to generate electricity; in other words, air becomes the electricity and the power in the motor, and in your body it does the same. As the air passes from the brain down into your body, it forces itself upon and connects up with the liver and heart, and naturally turns the three parts, namely, the brain, liver, and heart into motors which run your entire body. As an electric motor and electricity causes an electric fan to turn, an automobile to run, or a pump to work, so does air cause the brain, heart, and liver to act, and through them the body to work and move.

Since the brain, heart, and liver are perpetual life motors, I shall, for your convenience, name the brain the animal motor; the liver, the natural motor; and the heart, the vital motor. The reason I call the liver the natural motor, is because it does all the natural work inside your body. The liver takes and separates all the different food and drink substances that are put into the stomach. It separates, retains, spreads, and sends off into the different portions of your body, substances and supplies that are needed for the body and liver, itself. It directs and sends the refuse matter, including all poisons, out and away from the body.

The reason I call the heart the vital motor, is because

Digitized by Google

the heart is the engine or life pumper and spreader of the blood and water of your entire body. You have noticed that as soon as the heart stops beating, the body stops obeying live orders and ceases live moments, and such a body or person is pronounced dead, which means an actionless, understandingless and thoughtless body or person. You therefore understand that the heart is the real and most vital part of and in your body. By taking care of your liver, through correct feeding, your heart constantly renews itself without your attention.

The reason I call the brain the animal motor, is because we originate from animal and wild matter, and the brain, being of flesh substance or animal matter, is so in desire and action, and I call her so. Most people allow their animal brain and body to dictate to them animal, material, and sensual orders; and they gratify them. This causes most people to be the slaves of the body, and suffer thereby the punishment of death. It is but recently that a great many people have succeeded in overthrowing and throwing away forever all old and false thoughts and beliefs in all wrong things and ideas. As they set themselves to work on the natural, simple, free, and correct way, they succeeded in their undertakings. What has been done by others and is being done by others, may now be done by you. For your benefit I have written a separate article which you will find farther on in the book, named "How to Change the Animal Grade Thinking Brain into a Superior Grade."

Since your body imitates nature's actions, and changes momentarily from the moment of creation and birth onwards for the stronger and better, you can therefore understand that it is foolish for us to lay down certain rules for sleep, exercise, work, or play, for the body. If you have the time, and feel like sleeping much, do so. If, on the other hand, you work and study, and have no time for much sleep, your body will accustom itself to that mode of life, too. Know that

Digitized by Google

your body will in a few days accustom itself to hard labor, just as easily as it does to easy labor; in fact, the harder you gradually force things upon her, the better for you because you become the doctor over her and can handle her better than any other doctor. Know also that your body can be made to suffer, rest, work, or bear many hardships without harm, if necessary, because your body renews and regrows itself constantly.

Exercise for the body, as in physical culture, which foolish people indulge in, is the biggest piece of nonsense known. Every time you move your hands up or down or bend your body so many times so many ways, you work for nothing so many times and you tear so many atoms in the operation; and you afterwards have to eat more in order to regrow the lost tissue. And what have you gained!

Therefore, take nature's true exercise. First, eat less. Then take an ideal little walk daily, or every other day, or whenever you please. Walk briskly, as much or as little as you feel like walking at the time. This is all the body needs. Never allow yourself to become enslaved to any part of your body, or to other things.

A bath every day or so in the summer time, and every three or four days in the winter time, is all that is necessary for the body. Make the water as hot or as cold as your body will dictate to you. Warm, hot, and at last cold, is a good rule for a good bath. But waste no time or thoughts on anyone's bath rules; make, change, and use your own rules to please yourself, and apply the same method to all other rules.

Never fear to work hard if you have work to do, for your body like gold is always ready for use; but never waste time on foolish and useless exercises. Never think material body, especially the body of any other person, and your body will gradually become as solid and as strong as the oak.

Digitized by Google

PART NINE

CIRCUMCISION

Tree Grafting and Circumcision.

WHEN nature, through the force of breeze, wind, water and air, gets two or more different elements together, a new creation or a new thing is the accidental result. All such creations are neither perfect in state nor grade but are the best that wild nature can create blindly and roughly.

Nature accidentally causes wild apples, wild cherries, wild wheat, wild fruit, wild metals, wild people, and in fact anything and everything in the world to appear in a wild state. The best child born is wild. It is men and women who must step in and bring those wild grades up to perfection, else they are again wildly destroyed by nature, and the good have to suffer for the evil actions of the wild.

If no man had ever conceived the idea of tree-grafting or the purifying of fruit, we would still be obliged to eat wild fruit, as savages do, and humanity would naturally die off at a much faster rate. If no man had ever thought or conceived the idea of refining and purifying iron, silver, gold, and other metals, we would never have had steel, pure silver, nor twenty-four karat pure gold, because no mine in the United States turns out gold as pure as that. If no man had ever thought or conceived the idea, that if the rule applied to fruit, metals, and trees, if applied to men would cause men also to become perfect, we would never have known the word circumcision. If no man had ever allowed himself to experiment with the idea of circumcision, we

Digitized by Google

would still be in the same state of mind the Indians were in at the time Columbus discovered them.

Circumcision is necessary for each living male in the world, regardless of color, race, or belief, for the following reason. When a child starts growing in the mother's womb, it develops and grows through air, being supplied by the mother's breathing, and also grows in a kind of poisoned water. If the child is a female, it starts, at a certain age, to periodically imitate its mother's actions in cleaning itself, and becomes purified at about the age of forty or fifty. But when the child is a male, he has absolutely no facilities or outlet to clean himself or to get rid of the dirt and impurities he grew in before birth. Circumcision only, cleans the male of all impurities. If this is not attended to by parents when the child is small, or by the individual himself when grown up, such individual cannot reach the highest state of perfection in the world, just as a wild fruit tree cannot be expected and will not bear cultivated fruit.

Another grand lesson we learn from the above, is that no female should intercourse until after purification which is at the age of about forty or forty-five years. Through early marriages, or by the male coming in contact with the female during the period of her filthiness, the female has caused the male to contract a number of filthy diseases now known as men's diseases, which if not checked promptly by both sexes, will, according to official records, wipe off most of the human race from the earth within the next fifty years. No remedy will ever be found for this evil, because the human body is the upper grade of all matter in existence, and circumcision, only, brings it up higher and to the highest. No eugenic or other laws will ever accomplish anything for the human race because a person can become eugenicless a few hours after marriage, as quickly and as easily as before marriage. It is natural knowledge and individ-

Digitized by Google

ual action alone that can help or remedy this evil. The female abstaining from intercourse, and the male circumcising himself, constitute the only true and natural remedy.

People will claim that although the Jewish race is of circumcised stock, yet not all do well. There are a few good and natural reasons for this being so. You recollect me telling you that when the ancient Hebrews wanted the various tribes to take up the practice of circumcision, they gave as an inducement to a certain tribe, the torah, but withheld the key to it; and without the key to the torah, the Jews have fared but little better than the other races have. True, the Jewish race makes use of Hebrew letters and writings, but that is far from understanding its original meaning; and this misinterpretation has kept most of them down. The Jewish language is very easy, and it sounds something like German; but the Hebrew is very hard. The Jew is in the same position with his Hebrew as you would be with French, if the language was unknown to you. Although French is written in English characters, yet you could never tell the thought meaning of the words by looking at or pronouncing them.

The Jews eat fish and meat which they are strictly forbidden to do, as in Genesis 1.29 "Behold, I have given you every herb yielding seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for food." The Jew is also ordered not to follow the customs of his fathers in respect to church-building and god-praying, as in Ezekiel 20.18 "Walk ye not in the statutes of your fathers, neither observe their ordinances, nor defile yourselves with their idols." Again, the Jew is ordered not to conceive of any god nor to believe in any god, whether mentally or otherwise, as in Exodus 20.4 "Thou shalt not make unto thee a graven image, nor any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth

Digitized by Google

beneath, or that is in the water under the earth." Since it is quite evident that the Jew unconsciously breaks the laws and instructions given him, he is therefore rewarded no better for his god-making, praying, and church-building, than the Hindoo, Christian, Gentile, or other fanatics are.

The fact, however, is this. Circumcision without development of brain, does not and will not make a perfect human being because it is work half done; just as a wild tree that is cut into for grafting, but the right substance not being added to it, will not develop or change it from a wild into a cultivated state. Again, development of brain without circumcision will also not produce results, because such a brain is but in an imitating state, and as such, it is impossible for it to fight wild nature on many things and subjects that an individual must face as he goes along in life and grows.

As I read the newspapers and magazines of late, I find that a great many of the best American and other people are searching for and hunting to discover eternal life on this earth. To all those, and in fact to every male in the world, I say, go and be circumcised and you will have a chance of living on this earth. Remember Christ's words. "Except ye be born again, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven." The above words mean to circumcise yourself. Christ knew well enough that you could not go back into your mother's womb to be reborn; neither did he want you to die and lose your body as preachers and foolish women tell us to do. Through circumcision you lose your old bad life blood, but you save your body; and you afterwards naturally make and receive a purer and better blood, the same as a wild apple tree when grafted loses its badness and is capable thereafter of giving out a purer apple, for that is the way things work in nature. Therefore, whether you are a Christ follower or not and want to save your life, go and circumcise yourself, and you will

Digitized by Google

have helped yourself to be saved, for through circumcision you perform a safe act in favor of your body as well as a firm protection against blind nature.

Baptism or taking a bath in church means nothing at all to body, because nature has everywheres plenty of dirty, clean, cold, and hot waters, and more than enough to spare to bathe herself and us in. Circumcision, only, does the real work.

If or whether Jesus or Moses ever were or not, matters not. As long as they are not here with us now, it does us no good to waste time in thinking about or believing in them. If the writings are here, it simply means we must do likewise and we will gain and receive likewise.

Circumcision, like everything else in the world, may be done only one way right and many ways wrong. To be circumcised in a wrong way is as bad as no circumcision at all. The ancient Hebrews made a deep study of the subject and experimented with their method of circumcision for many years, and their method is the only correct and true method at this date. The Jewish race at the present day is the only one that follows out the scientific rules on circumcision as laid down in the days of old. If you intend to be circumcised, or if you have any boys to be circumcised, see to it that an orthodox Jewish Moihel performs all the operations, and no one else. Circumcision is too valuable and serious a matter to allow it to be done in a wrong way. The orthodox Jew who performs the operation will not charge you any more for the work, or perhaps not as much as an ordinary surgeon, but the operations will be performed right. A word to the careful is sufficient!

To show my good Christian friends that without circumcision eternal life on this earth is not possible, all they have to do is read Genesis 17.14 "And the uncircumcised male who is not circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin, that soul shall be cut off from his people,"

Digitized by Google

The above words prove that experiments were made by scientists thousands of years ago, with both circumcised and uncircumcised people, and the above statement shows that all the uncircumcised died. What has happened before or in the olden days, holds good to-day, for blind nature knows no time; it is always the same.

The bible, although written some thousands of years ago, has remained a closed safe to even the greatest master minds we had in between; and even with their great ingenuity they were unable to discover anything new or better for human efficiency; the fact is we do not need anything better than circumcision, for that is all that is necessary. All the discoveries that have been made ever since are only of a mechanical nature; and so will it be in the future. The physicians and preachers of to-day are as far behind in knowledge and understanding of real natural science about human efficiency, as they were at the time when the first language in the world was invented and written into the bible, and they will never get any further for certain natural reasons; and now it is too late for them to learn because everybody will know as much. The reader will also see that all inventing and improvements that have ever been made either before the writing of the torah or bible or since it was written, were all done by individuals only; not by or through a god. The reader may also note that all the praying and thanks, and all the church-building that has been going on ever since, was and is an absolute waste, and it might as well not have been carried on at all, for all the good it did. In fact it has harmed and held back all progress in the world, and must anyhow be done away with at last.

Without circumcision you cannot save your life even though you become a monk or a pope and lock yourself away from the world, while through circumcision you can save and enjoy your life freely and happily amongst all, good or bad. You will be able to walk the streets

Digitized by Google

and view half undressed girls and women, and their vulgarity will never even tempt you, because you, as refined and pure, will understand the impure; the same as a pure fruit is always pure unto itself even though mingled and laid between impure and wild fruit.

I herewith change and create a new name for the girl, the young lady, and all women who walk out into the streets artificially or half undressed. Their name henceforth shall be Woe-man, Woeman! If, in the future, all women will walk in the streets dressed fully in either women's clothes or in regular men's suits (I do not care which, just so they are fully covered up the same as men are), I shall withdraw this paragraph from future editions of this book, and will give them back their regular name.

Through circumcision, temptations, harmful desires, and bad habits are easily rejected, while without circumcision it is almost an impossibility and rarely accomplished

Through circumcision, development of brain is made easy and is done quickly, and life becomes sweeter and better as time continues, while without circumcision, development of brain is slow and always clogs and drags the brain downwards. The best college or university training and instruction, without circumcision, is but a waste of time, energy, effort, and money, because the individual dies with his knowledge. If you are once circumcised, never allow yourself nor your offsprings to intermarry nor to exchange with other blood, for you are destroying the best thing or turning the purest thing in the universe into a bad thing; which is not right to do.

All parents should see to it that their boys are circumcised, for by so doing the boys will grow into better men, consequently a better world of people in the future.

If all the breweries and cigar factories were closed, drinking and smoking would continue, but of a worse

Digitized by Google

poisoned nature and style than at present. If your boy is circumcised, he will be able to pass by a hundred saloons a day, and not enter one of them or drink any liquors or smoke if he learns of their harm. Through circumcision, you are taking about sixty per cent. of a useless load of filthy animal matter off the boy's body, and he will be able to fight off the other forty himself if he knows that his health and life depend upon it. So do not delay action, but attend to the first important natural matter, first!

Digitized by Google

PART TEN

FOOD

True Science About Food and the Feeding of the Body.

If I were to leave the reader off without explaining the truth about food and the feeding of the body, my book of thoughts would be of no earthly value to you because all things in nature become complete and perfect when all things are added or subtracted in correct proportion to help make them so. Otherwise, there can be no perfect action nor complete perfection. For instance, gasolene in a barrel but none in an automobile reservoir will not make an automobile move an inch. While again, an automobile reservoir chuck full of gasolene, allowed to run through the carburetor without air, will also not run nor move an automobile. The gasolene leaking out of the machine into the street, and a man passing by with a lighted cigar or cigarette would cause an explosion, and the entire gasolene and automobile would be destroyed. The same holds good with a human body as to food as well as to thoughts. Thought, without food knowledge, will kill a body, while too much food without thoughts, will explode the body, and an explosion of a body means being sick or dead.

Food, the same as anything else in the world, works and acts in a positive and negative form. Its positive form or action is found in the habit we acquired imitating others; and thinking eating necessary, we do so more or less; just as a person who acquires the smoke habit must and does smoke, while the one who does not smoke, gets along as well without it. The bad feature or the negative action of food, is that it causes the

Digitized by Google

liver and body to work constantly in order to eliminate the very same food that we put into the body.

Fasting, the opposite of food, also has a positive and negative action and value to itself. Its positive action or abstaining from food is grand, because the body as a whole is then obliged to use up all the left over particles that have been stored up throughout the body for many days or weeks, and, as it takes all those particles and consumes them, it cleans up the inside of the entire body as clean as when newly born. While again, fasting too long a time or the negative action, might kill the body entirely.

Since you now understand the two extreme ways and actions of both food and fast, therefore, learn to feed your body intelligently or in such a way that you make use of both systems at all times reasonably. By so doing, you will prove the knowledge through your power in operating your body, or assisting it to run right without the help of god, doctors, preachers, Christian Scientists, or rather wrong-Scientists, I should have said.

The wrong way to feed the body is to lay down rules about the hours of feeding, as you notice most of humanity do. This wrong custom has been brought into the world the same as everything else, through the wrong thoughts of animal-minded savages first, and some make use of it even at this advanced day. Habits, even though bad, are sometimes hard to break away from unless a complete understanding about the subject is spread to that individual's brain. Know then, that you must not make your rules that it is breakfast you must eat, just because somebody else does so, nor because it happens to be seven or eight A.M. Neither should you give your body any food just because it happens to be twelve noon, or supper because it is six P.M. Forget altogether man's made time or the hours of the day regarding feeding the body.

Digitized by Google

Did you ever watch a fireman shoveling coal into a fire-box under a boiler in a factory or in a building? Let me tell you what he does. After he opens the fire-box and throws in about six, eight, or ten shovels of coal, he walks back to his seat and sits down with the hope and desire in his brain that the coal he just put in the boiler should last for a long time; for he understands that his salary is just the same whether he would be obliged to shovel more or less coal into the fuel-box. He also understands that overfeeding the fuel-box with coal, causes a greater amount of steam to be created in the boiler than is necessary, and as a whole, his work would be much greater for the same amount of salary and his accomplishment would be of no value to the owner or himself. Therefore, learn to run your body, and feed it just as lazily and as stingily as the fireman feeds coal into the fire-box. When you sit down to feed your body or stomach, use but two or three different grades of substances of food supply, and not six, ten, or twenty. Eat as much or as little as you think, or your judgment feels you have enough inside of you; then forget any hours or what hours you are going to feed again. In other words, stretch that supply of food just as many hours as you can; the longer the better. This is correct and natural human feeding.

Do not allow yourself to compare your body with the boiler just because I have given it as an illustration. No, dear reader, do not. When a boiler or other things are created and made by men, it always takes a person to run and watch it if usefulness and service is desired; and in order that the boiler may do service in running a plant, a certain amount of water must constantly be kept in that boiler, and a certain amount of fire heat must constantly be kept under the boiler. If the above is not attended to properly, you either have an explosion of the entire plant, or else no steam and the engine stops running; while we human beings, images of blind

Digitized by Google

nature with the understanding of positive and negative power within us, can operate and run ourselves at will, differently. If we were to be locked up in a room and no food given us for two or three days, we would not die or stop running, like an engine would; we would go right on living until released from said room and food given us. You will also notice that when water is kept away from you for hours, it does not cause you to die, but a boiler without water would either explode or not serve at all. As a matter of fact, a body can live for several days without water or food with no harm at all. It can live on air and water from one week up to several months without danger. So you can see that true food knowledge in the brain makes the body act and obey accordingly.

Know that your body, imitating nature, and working back and forth in order to live, can stand considerable suffering and punishment. Your body will do work and live right along even though you did not feed her with food and drink at the moment she desired it, because, your body, containing all elements of nature, through constant breathing of air causes one set of atom elements inside of your body to be changed into different grades of atom elements to help out other parts of the body until such time arrives that you can give her a little food or drink; and the less you feed her the better, if you wish to be in a healthy condition. Pay no attention, whatever, as to what doctors may tell you on the subject. They do not study medicine in the right way, and therefore do not understand better. They, like the preachers, twist everything good into bad; else there would be neither doctors nor preachers in existence! There is an old saying that preachers kill humanity mentally with false preaching, while doctors kill humanity materially with their poisoned drugs, chemicals, and medicines!

The body, like a boiler or everything else in the

Digitized by Google

world, needs cleaning occasionally. A boiler may be cleaned by allowing its fire to die down entirely, and then fired up anew to get it in operation again. But our bodies, operating in a consuming, supplying, destroying, and building style at the same time, do not allow us to die down for cleaning and then become alive again like the boiler, because no-body becomes alive after death. No medicine in the world can do your bodily cleaning because medicine itself is but a food or a poison of a certain grade and can therefore not clean! The only safe method for a bodily cleaning is to reverse the principle or method, from feeding to fasting the body. This method does the work for us and saves us the trouble of swallowing drugs or dying.

When you first commence to change your method from the wrong to the natural way of feeding, you will have headaches. That is natural, because a change from an animal state of life into a higher form of life causes the entire body to be shaken up for a while; the same as two families, one moving out, and the other moving into a house at the same time, will cause a disturbance in that building for a while. The disturbance in your head is made by the many germs that have been living and existing in your body but which are of no earthly use to your body or you. Being notified that they must vacate your body, and not being pleased with the idea, they will complain and stir around for a few days or weeks until your body, brain, and air finally throw them out. This will cause you an unpleasant feeling for a while. But in all cases do not fear such but go in with the determination to gain through the change. After suffering a headache or other unpleasant feelings during the first two or three weeks, you will discover that they will not bother you any more, and your feelings will at last be changed into a pure and ideal state and will so continue.

Digitized by Google

Kind and Grade of Food for the Body

Now let us see what kind and grade of food the human being may use in order to get the most strength and power out of, with the least substance. Knowledge and economy make health and strength, not food. You already know that all things seen in matter exist in air. It therefore causes us to constantly eat or breathe all things mixed in the air, which means we are being fed by air, a mixture of all good, bad, and poisonous substances in the universe. Take for example, shoe-blacking. If you see it in a bottle or box, then know that it was in the air a few weeks or months ago. Otherwise, you would not be able to see it in the material form at all. Shoe-blacking could be manufactured in quantities to cover and fill up the entire world with it. So you can see and understand that we eat or breathe shoe-blacking even this very moment. If you hear some people telling you of radium being worth a million dollars an ounce, know that you have been breathing and eating it ever since you were born. Radium, like electricity or oxygen, has always existed in the air. Those who are unable to get it into bottles or boxes cheaply, have simply not as yet learned the easy method; but know that you are constantly breathing and using it from the air in natural proportions. So be wise! Since we could not live but three minutes without air, you will understand that it is our main feeder of life, health, and strength; and not food or drink as most people imagine. You already understand that the air we breathe contains poisons in it. It is for this reason we must choose the purest, best, highest, and cleanest grade of food matter that can be found on the earth, for our food; and but little of it at that. The purer our choice for a finer grade of food, the finer and better in time becomes the grade of the body and brain, for one helps and builds for good with the connection of the other.

Digitized by Google

Now let us take a wide view and see what wild nature grows in the world that human beings may or may not eat. We find that wild nature grows and makes air, water, rock, sand, ants, flies, snakes, rats, hogs, deer, rabbits, cattle, sheep, fish, dogs, elephants, cereals, oils, and fruits. Animal-minded, wild, and half-civilized people who care not or are not particular about their lives, and rather aim or strive for eternal death, will eat or consume anything from a snake up. As they do not understand better they cannot be blamed.

Owing to the fact that the human race is the accident of animals, it naturally causes them to desire meats or animal flesh, their affinity substance as a food which in turn kills them.

Know, though, that as the human body is an image of nature and imitates her, you can see that the body will grow itself according to the grade of food you put into it. Take a plot of ground and plant pear trees on it, and it will grow pears; plum trees, plums; cherry trees, cherries; peach trees, peaches; and rose bushes, roses; while if sheep were put on it, it would grow more sheep; horses, horses; cattle, cattle; and hogs, hogs. The same plot of ground will be in a clean condition when growing the fruit trees, but in a dirty and filthy condition when growing the animals on it. It is the same with the human body. If we put animal flesh into it, it grows into a dirty and filthy state, thereby causing all the sickness and diseases most of the human race suffers from; and you already understand that we will never discover any drugs or remedies to heal wrong individual action. All human beings, therefore, should immediately break away from animal food if they wish health, power, and advancement. People who care to advance themselves to the reality of true living without breaking the laws of nature and who will not allow themselves to be torn down by blind nature, will not look to flesh substances for health and strength, but

Digitized by Google

will choose for their food cereals, olive oil, bread, dates, and ripe fruit only. (No bananas.)

If people look to matter for food and strength, they will find it in cereals and fruits, not in animal flesh. Let me show you how and why cereals and fruits contain more life and strength making power within themselves than meat, fowl, or fish do. Take for instance a grain of rice, wheat, or corn, each of which have enough life power atoms within themselves to reproduce from ten to twenty-five or more grains of their own kind. You will note that one grain of corn, planted in the ground, reproduces at one time many in return. Therefore, when you eat rice, cereals, or fruit, you get nature's most life atoms container in the most purified manner, because you swallow the rice, corn, or cereal, whole, just as they were when planted in the ground. The boiling does not harm them any because your stomach is nothing more than a combination fuel receiver and boiler, and if you swallowed rice raw, your stomach would cause it to undergo a boiling process inside of itself anyhow; with dates and prunes it is the same. From olive oil and fruits you naturally get fatness, but this fatness is the cleanest in existence, while animal fatness is the filthiest.

Now let us look at animal substances as a food supply for human beings. Let us see whether the same rule can be applied to animal food, or whether we can derive as much benefit from animal food as from cereal food, regardless of what deceiving or ignorant professors and doctors tell us. Let us take a hog, a cow, a sheep, a rabbit, a fish, a fowl, a bird, or any other animal, and see in what form we can eat or consume them. In the first place, the above named specimens cannot be cooked in their entirety, fit for human consumption; neither can you swallow for a meal one or a number of them in whole, alive, raw or cooked. This, not being possible, we must trace the thing back a little farther

Digitized by Google

and discover in what way such things may be eaten by some of the human race. True, a fish, a hog, a sheep, a fowl, or any other animal has the power of reproducing about as many in number of their own kind as a grain of wheat has, only in a longer period of time, but since it is impossible to swallow animals in whole, either raw or cooked, the only way we can do so is by killing them first. So just listen. The moment you kill them, you force all life, power, and strength away from their bodies forever! You, as a rule, always throw away their inside reproducing substance because of their dirty and filthy nature, and what have you then left to eat? Nothing but their dead, lifeless, and powerless flesh only! Remember, therefore, that when you eat animal matter, whether it comes in the form of dead sardines or dead salmon put up in tin cans, or whether it is a roasted pigeon served you in the Waldorf, you, at all times, do nothing more than swallow dead and powerless matter. It then takes your entire body's reserve energy and power as well as lots of nature's air to just help you digest the filthy dead flesh of a dead animal, which means working overtime helping yourself to die. In other words, when a human being eats animal flesh, he is simply killing himself in order to live!

Know that eating animal matter of any kind is just like swallowing shoe leather or wood, which, if at sea without any food, you can get along on for a little time, but sooner or later the body gradually gets clogged up and works slower and slower as time continues, until finally the entire machinery inside shuts down and is lifeless. Also know that it is a very difficult task for your delicate inside machinery to grind up and work off flesh or wrong food away from you; neither can you buy new delicate parts to replace your worn ones.

Also know that your natural motor, the liver, working like a movement in a watch, only so much in twenty-four hours, can only grind up and work off a certain

Digitized by Google

amount of food for you each day. When food is left over in your stomach from day to day or week to week, it breeds various useless atom germs and poisons inside of you. They then spread throughout your body and the result is useless fatness, rheumatism, sickness and all other troubles; in fact, these useless atom germs become parasites upon the body and finally kill it.

If you are too fat, do not buy drugs or poisons of any kind to reduce it. Simply refuse to sit down and eat regularly. After a few days your regular habit of feeding will be broken, and your surplus fatness will naturally and gradually begin to leave you, slowly but surely. You will then wonder at the results of your own natural accomplishments. Pay no attention to doctors or other weak-minded people who tell you how many pounds you must or ought to weigh at a certain height or age. You are not an animal or a hog. No one is going to ship you to the Chicago stockyards to be sold at so much per pound. Therefore, never step on a scale to see how much you weigh. The fact is, the heavier a body the more pulp or filthy and useless substances does it contain. A fat and fleshy person always feels weak and sick, and the troubles of a fat person are many indeed.

It is not the fleshy or fat person who is strong; it is always the lean person. The lean person is always able to do more work, and moves about anywheres and everywheres with ease, while the fat person cannot. A person, throwing off all useless fat or flesh, causes the body to become purer and stronger, because air has then a chance to live, move, run, and fly through the inside of the whole body at all times. Notice that air and water cause the keeping together, growing, and moving of all things in the world and universe. The earth-matter is but little in quantity; water and air much. Imitate nature in keeping your body-matter down in weight, and you will feel strong, happy, and healthy. Mothers must

Digitized by Google

therefore remember that the more food they force onto their children, the weaker will their children be; and the same rule applies to mothers themselves, and to all other human beings as well.

During hot weather, or in warm climates, a body needs almost no food at all, because the warm air surrounding the body and being breathed into it, feeds it with enough heat to run it in healthy order. A few bites of toast or stale bread with hot or cold water once every two or three days, is all the food the body needs.

Since the liver can only do a certain amount of work every twenty-four hours, you will readily see that no sickness can ever come to you except through overfeeding. Doctors, of course, will never tell you the original cause of sickness because they do not know, or else it is against their interests to do so. They will always tell you that you caught a cold. If colds would get us into trouble, then we ought to get sick and die every time we get out of the house or sit in a draught, which is not the fact nor the truth of the matter. When your stomach is overloaded, the germs and poisons created from the surplus food will first commerce to come up through your mouth or nose as a mucus or slimy substance harder than ordinary saliva. This is your first sign that you have more food in you than you ought to have. If you stop eating for a day or so, your body will clean itself out, heal up, and run right along afterwards, the same as a cleaned watch or machine does. But if you run to a doctor or druggist, and he gives you more poison or drugs to add to the poison you already have in you, you are then making one bad thing worse twice; and if you come out alive, you are lucky indeed. If not, the undertaker is. And the doctor charges you or your estate the regular charge of two dollars for making the statement that you are really dead!

Know then, that health and strength cannot be had

Digitized by Google

from doctors or foods; neither can it be stored up by anybody, as foolish writers declare, for, if it were so, the rich would buy a million dollars worth of it at a time. Instruct your brain and body to hustle for their food, strength, health, and growth from the air as you breathe, and from water as you drink, and they will do so. For there is where the free and precious jewel lays!

The healthiest drink in the world is plain water, not iced nor distilled, but just as it runs from any faucet or place. It is better in that style than in any other way, owing to the mixing of air in its incoming from the reservoirs which are generally at a distance from a city. The germs that are in water will not hurt you a bit. As you drink water with germs in it, you only eat animals half-finished. That is all the animal flesh a human being should ever allow to enter into his body. They are more easily digested in that half-finished state, than they would be when grown into big-sized hogs, fishes, birds, or cows. When you know the inside and outside of nature, you easily understand that by drinking a glass of water with the germs all in them, you can make that do you as a meal; while the person who sits down to eat a made-dead steak has to pay for it, and also for the trouble of being served, and has plenty of trouble afterwards in digesting and eliminating it from his system. And what does he gain! No tea or coffee should be used by anybody, because the use of it, like smoke, drink, or flesh eating, will kill a body in time. If water is good and strong enough to help build and keep together a United States capitol, an elephant, a fifty story sky-scraper, and the earth, it is good enough to help us grow into strength when we drink it as it is. When people drink liquors, sodas, wines, beers, and other artificial make-ups, they have broken away from the natural law of purity and life growing to the law of poisoning and dead-way going.

Digitized by Google

When you throw yourself back to nature originally, you can understand things quickly and have lots of fun watching other human beings indulging in a great many useless things, then complaining about the high cost of living, and if the tariff is reduced to have goods come in from Europe at a lower rate, our industries close down, and the same complainers, without work or money to buy at lower cost, are then complaining of high starving. So was it always, and so will it be always where Ignorance is the Lord.

A few thousand years ago, such things as ice-cream, pies, and candies, were unknown, and if people lived well without them then, we must learn to live without them now. I am doing so right in the heart of New York City, and have never felt better and happier than I do now. People who do otherwise will always be sick and in trouble, and lose their lives through such indulgence. Never take nor give Christmas baskets of food; in other words, never be fed by the rich nor feed the poor, because material food kills.

Abstinence from a drink of water for several hours or days now and then, helps the body to grow stronger physically.

Delay in using the toilet for hours every now and then, teaches the body to grow sterner and more powerful. Abstinence from allowing your bowels to move for several days at a time now and then, and a fast at the same time, will cause your arteries, nerves, eyes, and whole body to grow anew and better. This method resurrects the entire flesh of your body the same as circumcision resurrects and purifies your blood and brain.

Since you direct the orders to your body yourself, you will not have to fear any danger, because when you go into a thing for the pleasure of it, your body soon helps you to overcome the greatest obstacles; and, as she enjoys the pleasure of the change herself, she will direct

Digitized by Google

or notify you in time of any extreme danger, in which case you can change any method safely.

Abstinence from all flesh foods or animal fats will give you in less than a year's time a clean, strong, and healthy body with plenty of pure blood. Furthermore, it will be impossible for you to get sick, because your body will have nothing to draw from to make you so as would be the case if you eat flesh. People who eat flesh or eggs are always as a rule sick. Their stomachs containing animal substances force through their bodies sores, boils, as well as inside the body contagious diseases, appendicitis, cancer, and what not, while people who abstain from flesh food are always clean and healthy because their stomachs are clean and are like the plot of ground that only grows fruit, and not hogs or animals. In other words, since these people keep their stomachs clean it naturally follows that their bodies are clean, for the stomach is the cause and the body the effect just as the animals are the cause and the ground the effect.

As you gradually learn your lessons, follow them out, and you will in a short time see yourself changed and grown into perfect health, strength, and power, without animal flesh, or much food.

Air Food for the Body

This Part is written exclusively for the benefit of all circumcised males. Every male who is circumcised, whether Jew, Christian, Gentile, negro, or of any other color, may make use of it. All others will only succeed partly, and will finally fail and lose all; for in nature, like at the postage stamp window, ninety-eight cents will never get you a dollar's worth of stamps. Women who come from circumcised stock, Jew or Gentile, may try the experiment and those who make a success of it will be the gainers; if not, they can throw them-

Digitized by Google

selves back to the life and method of feeding and fasting as outlined previously.

I stated in a former Part that there are three openings in the body that constantly create life, and two which create death. The two nostrils are two separate openings leading into different parts of the body. You may close one of your nostrils and live and breathe with the other, but you will find that there is a difference in feeling inside of your body. Since we could not live but three minutes without air, but could live without water or food for several days, it is therefore a fact that our nostrils are the two main openings through which we are fed with life. By constantly feeding food into the body through the mouth, and continually throwing it out through one of the lower openings, is like a man putting a hundred gold dollars into his pocket which has a hole in it; he loses all his gold and gains nothing for the trouble.

You now understand that all things come from air; therefore, food, strength, life, and blood is in the air, too. If blood was not in the air you would never be able to see an animal or human being with blood in them. If blood or life strength could be had from food materials, as ignorant doctors or professors tell us, we would do nothing but grow foodstuffs and eat them from morning till night, or else squeeze the juice out of them, as some people make wines and liquors, and drink it. But since the rich and even doctors and professors who have a chance to taste and try everything die off through this wrong method, it therefore proves that blood and life strength cannot be had from foodstuffs or liquors.

The air we breathe into our body has separate places for creating the several different grades and colors of blood. It is not our stomach or food that makes blood. As I have already stated, the more food we eat the more do we rob our body of its pure blood in order to help us eliminate the food matter which is nothing but

Digitized by Google

pulp. When you read about a Red Sea in the bible, know that it is in your body where there is a real red sea. And when you cut your finger you see red water, do you not? This is another lesson our preachers, pope, rabbis, and professors have not learned out of the bible as yet; and it is too late now! If you took a trip to Egypt to look at the Red Sea, you would find the water just as green or blue in color as the water in the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans.

Follow my words with attention. Our parents breathe just ordinary air. The air, as they breathe, becomes albumin or blood (air also creates heat in a body), and finally through air we become a germ. As a germ, through more air, heat, and about two hundred and eighty days of time, we grow into about ten pounds of matter known as a complete baby. Now then, since we can grow from air or nothing into a ten or twelve pound live baby, does it not prove that our food and the best kind of strength and life making power is in the air, too? And not in food materials! Ignorant people think that a child eats, previous to birth, part of the food its mother eats. This is not true, because it grows and lives in a sack of its own, and develops in and through air only. Supposing, through the accidental combination of oxygen and dead matter, I was one of the original accidents in nature. Can you not see that I would have to be laying outside somewheres in the sand without food or a mother for nine months and just exist on the air and rain until I become a complete baby!

To gradually make your body live without material food, do this. First change your diet from meat gradually to fish and eggs. Eat meat one day, fish the next, and so on until you have done away with meat eating altogether. Then, do away gradually with fish eating, and then with egg eating. Use rice, prunes, toast, fruits, and stale bread instead. After you are down to a cereal and bread diet, cut your meals down to two a day,

Digitized by Google

then to one a day which is child's play. Then one meal in two days, one in three days, and so on. By so doing, you will be gradually closing up one lower opening that creates death. Operating your body two or three against one makes you the winner of life and everything.

Air creates water and matter outside of the body; air creates water and saliva inside the body. The saliva, re-entering our stomach, and more air on top of that, ought to be plenty natural food to keep the body running, just as before birth. This means rest for the body from food, but not from work; and this is what is meant by the word sabbath as written in the bible.

The reader must bear in mind that if this experiment is entered into, he must do so for the pleasure of it. Do not use any force or haste to accomplish it. Use a loving, kind, and gradual way, and you will succeed. Absolute abstinence from the opposite sex in thought or otherwise, must be strictly adhered to. Keep busy at some useful work all the time, just as though you had three meals a day. You will find that without food you will feel happier, healthier, and stronger than with it, and you will also find that you will feel younger than you did in your childhood days.

Digitized by Google

PART ELEVEN

HOW TO STOP BAD HABITS

How to Stop Smoke, Drink, and other Bad Habits.

If you have any of the above bad habits you will have to stop them. I am well aware that smoke alone will kill any man or woman in a certain length of time. Artificial drinks or liquors will do the same. Meat eating or other flesh substances as a food, will also kill the body in time. If you did get into any of these habits you did so on your own accord or were trained into them by your parents, friends, or yourself. Since you allowed yourself to get into these bad habits, you yourself must now learn to get rid of them. You now understand that your body, as the highest and finest grade of flesh matter in the world, will not stand any mixing with any lower grade of matter. If you do mix yourself with the lower you suffer the results.

I have already explained to you that fruits and cereals are the best as well as the worst food substances that you should allow to enter your body, for as soon as they do enter, air and the body turns them into medicines, alcohol, poison, and other ingredients anyhow. Know, that when you take water and mix it with artificial substances and name it beer, soda, whiskey, wine, or any other name, you have taken nature's pure health drink and adulterated it; and if you drink it, you are causing your body to grow in artificial poison and are helping yourself and body to a fast death. If a man or woman drinks, smokes, prays, and abuses himself or herself otherwise, and lives to be seventy-five or a hundred years and then dies, he or she has not accomplished

Digitized by Google

much of anything, because a human body when born into this world is good to live on perpetually without death. Persons who go down into the grave after they are once well launched in this world are losers here and losers there, or are losing everything here and hereafter.

If our folks had never taught us how to eat flesh, fish, or fowl, while children, we would never care for them, for we would not know or care to know whether they were good to eat or not. We would simply abstain from eating such, the same as we abstain from eating snakes or rats; although I am told that some people in Europe eat snakes and mice even at this day.

If we had never noticed a preacher, rabbi, or any other man smoking or drinking, we would never have imitated nor done such a thing for we would not have known how to do it. If we had never seen beer, wine, or whiskey, we could never have desired to drink any. But as nature works and produces everything in a wild state first, you can readily understand that it was through the savage brain that these bad things came into existence. No doubt, but that some savages, many years ago, not finding anything to do with their time, picked up a few leaves of a tree like thoughtless children do, rolled them into the shape of a cigar, and commenced to smoke them just as a novelty; and the habit of smoking sprang into existence from that moment on and is still imitated by some of the supposedly civilized and intelligent men and women of today. Other bad habits like gambling, meat eating, and animal imitating, naturally keep company with each other, for you know that one bad habit drags a person into another bad one, the same as one good habit causes the individual to grow into a better one. The continual development, though, from a savage to a superior state of civilization, teaches and causes us to do away with all useless habits, which in turn grows us upwards toward pure and supreme

Digitized by Google

perfection. As we grow in intelligence and learn the great lesson of cause, effect, and reward about nature and self, we learn to understand that we must eat, act, move, work, and live simply and cleanly. The moment we become aware of the good and bad effects of things we learn to break away from the bad ones entirely and forever.

There is absolutely no medicine or law in the world that will help anyone to stop bad habits, because if the bad or good law or medicine did change the habits we would then be enslaved to the medicine or law as badly as we were to the original bad habits. We generally get into bad or good habits, innocently or ignorantly, by a thought through the brain first. Habits, therefore, good or bad, must also be gradually forced out and away by a thought through the brain, and not through foolish law-passing or praying. It is a great pleasure to see ourselves subduing blind nature and becoming powerful and masters of our own body and selves. Undertake this work by yourself and you will win. Do not imagine me a preacher, for I am not. I am simply one of the common herd who passed through all these bad habits and went through many hardships through many different ways in order to find the truth, and you now have the benefit of same.

I lived in Denver in a dry district where no saloons were allowed. But you see, about ninety-nine physicians out of every hundred will gladly for a dollar prescribe for you beer or whiskey and change the English words into Latin. Of course, when the patient gets to the drug store he knows the goods by taste and the druggist recognizes the doctor's orders a la Latin. Down South, where prohibition absolutely rules, I saw them working the very same method. In other places where shipment of liquors is strictly forbidden I saw the goods come in boxes marked Armour's canned goods, or else sugar barrels containing bottled beer instead of sugar. I had

Digitized by Google

a good laugh when I saw some of those sugar barrels full of beer taken off a steamer and delivered to a drug store. So what is the use in wasting money, energy, and time on prohibition laws that cannot and will not produce results.

I shall now give you the simplest, easiest, safest, best, and cleanest method that you may use in order to do away with or rather get yourself away from smoke, drink, flesh eating, and other bad or good habits.

Take any one habit of the many you may have, and make a success of ridding yourself of one at a time until you have none left. For instance, if you have the drinking and smoking habits, pick the smoking habit as the first one to do away with. Instruct and plant the thought in your brain that you intend to cut down the supply of smoke gradually until you have done away with it entirely, never to pick it up again. After planting these thoughts in your brain you then proceed in the following manner. First see to it that you smoke about an inch less of your cigars or cigarettes each day. By eliminating and throwing away an additional inch each day, you will have succeeded in eliminating one cigar or cigarette from your regular day's smoke within one week's time. In other words, if you were smoking three cigars or cigarettes per day before you under took the method, at the end of the week you should be smoking only two per day. If you have succeeded thus far, you can feel happy over the success of your undertaking. The following week do not attempt to cut down your smoke supply but just keep your thoughts of success in front of you for the whole week bearing the thought in your brain how easy it was for you to eliminate one cigar or cigarette from your daily smoking supply. After you go along in this happy mood for a week or two, prepare your plans and again instruct your brain as well as your body, that you intend to repeat the former operation, to eliminate another cig-

Digitized by Google

arette or cigar per day. Set the date and promptly repeat the operation the same as at first, until you have brought yourself down to the habit of smoking but one cigar or cigarette per day. Then divide one cigar or cigarette for a two day's supply of smoke. Then spread it so that you make a cigar or cigarette last you for three days, and keep on spreading your thoughts as well as spreading one cigar or cigarette to last you for one week by just lighting it for one or two draws per day. Afterwards, make one cigar or cigarette do you for two weeks, three weeks, and finally for a month.

When you have trained yourself down to this point, then wake up to your own possibilities and power, and say to yourself: Now, I do not care for any more smoking at all, and will never smoke any more. You will find that this easy and natural method is the only one that can be used to successfully break away and keep away from the smoking and all other useless habits forever. Use the very same gradual method as I have outlined for you in the smoking habit, in doing away with drinking, flesh eating, praying, church-going, and in any and all useless good or bad habits.

Know, that beer, whiskey, fruit juices, and all other drink fluids that come in barrels, bottles, or jugs, excepting olive oil, are nothing but artificial poisons, which, if you drink them, will in time kill your body. Therefore use ripe fruits, and you will grow upwards and not be enslaved to habits. Become a master and director over yourself instead of being a slave under wild nature, and like some others, you, too, will become a power and law unto yourself, troubleless and habitless.

Digitized by Google

PART TWELVE

GERMS AND A SNEEZE

It makes me laugh when I read how some ignorant would-be professor, scientist, or doctor writes and tries to tell or scare us into fits about germs in water, more germs in air, and the many more millions of germs there are on the sidewalks, and so forth. The truth of the matter is that we are all germs. The whole world and universe are full of germs, small and large. We all grow up in and through germs and are big germs with little ones inside of us. Even an elephant is nothing more than a big germ with lots of little germs inside of him, also coming or originating from a tiny germ. But as you already know that germs of all kinds in the air are only in a half-completed state, and since we understand them while they do not understand us, they can therefore do us no harm at all; providing, of course, you keep your body clean inside and outside.

Did you ever stop to think how many ants, worms, mice, rats, snakes, cats, dogs, horses, cattle, tigers, bears, and elephants there are being born momently? Would you ever be able to figure out or guess correctly how many animals, insects, or vermin are going to be born throughout the world the next minute, next hour, next day, and the next year? Well, I presume they will run into the billions. But just listen. Germs for their lives, germs for their intestines, germs for their hides and skins, germs for their hair, germs for their tails, germs for their nails, germs for their eyes, and germs for their flesh are already existing and waiting for them in the air in air-germ form until the right moment,

Digitized by Google

place, and condition arrives. In the meanwhile we breathe them.

Did you ever stop to guess how many people died in the world a moment ago, an hour ago, a day ago, a year ago, or a hundred years ago? Their number, too, runs into the billions. Bodies which were buried fifty or a hundred years ago and rotting in their coffins are constantly sending out into the air a poisonous germ odor. This bad odor gets mixed in with the air, and we are forced to breathe and eat the germs that are created by the rotting of dead bodies. Funny, is it not? But true just the same. Cremation, therefore, should be used by all.

Did you ever watch a large newspaper press running and turning out newspapers, and did you notice and wonder how those papers pile themselves out one after another, faster than you can count them. But just listen again. If you could watch at one place and at one time, all the babies that are born into this world, perpetually, or from moment to moment, you would notice a much faster operation than the fastest running newspaper press in the world! And as germs for new babies are always in the air, we are obliged to breathe and eat them, too. Again funny, is it not!

Did you ever stop to figure out how much sand, water, trees, fruits, grains, marbles, beasts, birds, babies, metals, rocks, human bodies, ink, silver, iron, radium, and all other things and matter there are going to be born and grown the next moment, the next hour, or the next year? Well, the very fact is that germs for all things in the universe are always flying, swaying, existing, and moving in the air momently and perpetually, which means always presently. And although we continually breathe germs into our bodies and drink as well as eat some of them, yet they do not hurt us, neither do you see very many people dropping dead in the street from germs, do you!

Digitized by Google

The fact is this. The person who understands nature's facts, turns all bad and good germs perpetually into better germs as soon as they get into his brain and body. When you learn to do this, which is easy, you can then instruct some of those would-be professors or doctors, and explain to them the idea, and they, too, will commence to see the light. The germ fear will then break away from them and they will be able to enjoy a happier and healthier life on account of the knowledge you have given them freely.

To show you scientifically how your body in itself is protected against germs, know, that inside your nose there are a number of fine hairs which are interlaid or woven like wire in a fine sieve or tea strainer. When you are breathing through your nose, the air has to pass through these fine hairs first. These hairs sift through all air as it passes in at each inhalation, and any particles of matter, dust, or germs that are not desirable are kept out and must stay outside of these fine hairs. In other words, the air that goes or is drawn into your body, goes in in a germless, purified and sterilized form. This filtering and sterilizing process is done perpetually, repeatedly, and by itself, but few people are aware of this fact. You, therefore, have absolutely nothing in the world to fear about germs or other things.

Note another protection these little hairs afford in forcing out foreign matter and germs from the inside of your body. When a great number of particles of matter accumulate inside your nose in front of these hairs, and when the passage gets blockaded in a way that the breathing of air might soon stop (the same as a pipe gradually gets clogged up) a messenger runs up to the brain and notifies the policeman or overseer of said district, who has an office and lives in your brain. The messenger in his complaint states that there is a lot of matter laying or hanging around in front of the air

Digitized by Google

passage, which means in front of the little hairs in your nose, and that unless the overseer gets busy at once and chases all the accumulated dirt and matter out and away from the inside of your nose or nostrils, there would be trouble or perhaps death to the entire body, and with it the policeman or overseer of the district would have to die also. The overseer or policeman of the district, in order to protect and save his own life, gets busy the moment he receives the message. He at once makes his reserves (atoms) rush down toward the end of these little hairs to do the cleaning, while he stops the working of your brain and body for a moment and forces a sneeze upon you, thus cleaning and chasing all the dirt and germs out of your nose. It is for this reason we sneeze. Therefore know, that when you sneeze, you simply throw away a lot of dirty and useless accumulated dead matter and germs. You are then clean again or just as clean as at the time you were born. You can now see how wonderfully we are protected and guarded against all harm and damage from germs.

If it were true that contagious or other disease germs were really in existence, every individual in the world would have to pass through that particular disease, just as all persons must pass through creation and birth; but since people die of various diseases, it therefore proves that there are no disease germs in existence at all. It is ignorance that causes all sickness and disease. Take consumption for instance. The sickness in itself means the gradual consumption or the dying away of the body. The sickness is caused either through over-feeding, smoking, drinking, flesh eating, use of the opposite sex, or fear thoughts. The reason why everybody in the world does not die from consumption is the same as that not all people have flies in their rooms in the summer time. Not allowing flies to enter their rooms they screen all openings, and to prevent consumption or any other disease from entering our bodies we must act accordingly;

Digitized by Google

for "an ounce of prevention is worth more than fifty tons of cure."

If a person already has consumption, he need not waste any time or money buying medicines or other impossible cures. No turtle serum, radium, elephant serum, or other medicines will ever cure consumption or any other disease. If a person having consumption does not die from it, he will eventually die from turtle serumption if he forces it upon his body, and the same holds good with all other diseases. The best method for the cure of consumption or other diseases it to get out on a piece of land and work on it. Forget about the consumption germ thoughts, breathe and eat all the air possible, no medicines, meats, eggs, milk, pastry, or animal flesh of any kind to be fed to the body, and also abstinence from the opposite sex forever, in thought and otherwise. Inside of a year or two the body will regrow and rebuild itself into full health.

If doctors have no medicines to keep a person alive forever, they have nothing for us worth while. If a person uses medicines and lives for a few years longer, he does so in spite of the doctor's assistance, and not because of the virtue of his medicine. Since our bodies are the highest grade of matter in the universe, it will not mix with anything lower beneficially, but to its own detriment. After this, dear reader, pay no attention whatever, to any articles that will try to scare you into false thoughts about flies, germs, consumption, or other diseases. I have already told you that if you will not abuse yourself or allow anyone else to abuse, scare, or misinform you, you will sail along in life as happy as a little bird.

Digitized by Google

PART THIRTEEN

BREATHING

How To Breathe Correctly.

THIS part and in fact this whole book is not written with the intention of antagonizing the female sex nor even anyone else. It is written with the purpose of telling the entire truth of all faults, for if we once learn the real cause of a fault, we soon know how to correct it or its mistakes. By correcting a fault or a mistake in nature, you cause the wrong thing to become a right thing, and the imperfect, perfect; and perfection is the only thing that is worth having in all things.

Know, that from air and then as germs we continue breeding until we develop and finally become perpetual live breathing things.

Breathing, therefore, is what causes and makes LIFE or LIVING, THOUGHT or THINKING, TALK or TALKING, SING or SINGING, CRY or CRYING, and LAUGH or LAUGHING possible.

In breathing, the same as in all things in nature, there is but one right and correct way to do it in and several wrong ways. To breathe in the right way is, should, and must be done through your nose or nostrils only. A wrong way to breathe is through the mouth. Another wrong way to breathe is part of the time through the nose, and part of the time through the mouth. Still another wrong way is to breathe through the nose in the daytime and through the

Digitized by Google

mouth at night while asleep. To stop the habit of breathing through the mouth at night, put a large handkerchief over your head and tie it under your chin. This will help you to keep your mouth closed during the night, and after a few months your body, nose, and brain will become perfectly accustomed to the habit of breathing through your nose while asleep or awake.

To guard yourself against wrong breathing, always remember to breathe through your nose, and also to keep your food supply down. Learn to breathe through your nose slowly, and but eight or nine times per minute instead of from fifteen to twenty times per minute. This method will make your body live and operate with less expenditure of energy and food. Learn to do your breathing and thinking at the same instant, just as a person learns how to play the piano and afterwards operates it. He first studies the meaning and value of notes, then to read them, and at the same time learns the location of keys on the piano. After a while he is capable of operating the piano, reading the notes in the book as well as using his foot on the pedal, all done at one and the same moment. So will it work out with you, dear reader. If you practice the lessons in this book from time to time, you will have no trouble in accomplishing the acts of thinking and breathing at the same time and at all times rightly and correctly.

From general observation I find that most mouth breathing is done by women and children; this is why women and children always talk before they think. Of course, a great many men do the same; they are the ones who belong to the men-women type. A mouth breather will always talk in a thoughtless and wild style; this is because the brain gets no fresh air to work on or with, but has to subsist on the poisoned air that is exhaled by the body.

Every sincere, honest, and clear-thinking person always breathes through his nose slowly, even while he is

Digitized by Google

talking. When he needs a new supply of air, he stops his conversation for an instant, closes his mouth, draws in a new supply of air through his nostrils, goes on with his talk or continues his conversation until he needs another supply of air, in which case he repeats the same operation, and does so always. Every breath of air he draws in through his nose during his talk, is carefully sifted and analyzed by his brain, and this enables him to create new thoughts upon the subject he is talking about and also helps him make his decision upon a subject instantly. It is therefore natural that such a breathing causes good and true thinking, and makes such person's promise true and binding. A person who is a NOSE BREATHER and a BRAIN THINKER will never back out or down from his original promise. You will find that his promises are always faithfully kept regardless of the outcome of the undertaking.

A woman, breathing through her mouth and swallowing thoughts, will, in her conversation sweetly promise wonders she will do or accomplish for herself or others, but as soon as one leaves her, and if she accidentally catches a breath of air through her nose, it forces her brain to think right, and she then begins to feel that her promise is going to be of disadvantage to herself and she instantly changes her thoughts, which means breaking her promise, or going back on her own word. Mouth breathing is the cause of most women being false, even between themselves.

The man, woman, or child who breathes through the mouth, thereby swallowing thoughts, will always get themselves and others into trouble, imagining and thinking that it is somebody else's fault for their being in trouble.

Breathing through your mouth causes and makes you swallow air which contains thoughts, atoms of dust, germs, and poisons that should not be allowed to go into your body, while if you breathe through your nose,

Digitized by Google

the bad is kept out and the purified admitted. Mouth breathing causes vulgarity, fear, sickness, jealousy, selfishness, and all ignorance. We can make mouth breathers believe that an elephant can walk on the sea, or that god and angels are sitting in golden chairs and flying in the soft sky; and not falling down on top of us!

If you breathe through your mouth you force your heart to do double work, and sooner or later it will go on a strike and stop working altogether. Your heart must not be forced to create or analyze thoughts for you for it will not do it. It is your brain's work and duty to receive, reject, send, change, and create thoughts. And after this, see to it that your brain does the thinking work for you by breathing through your nose.

You now understand that breathing through your nose causes your brain to receive air first, and the air in turn does your true life-soul making. Therefore, continue to do so, and keep on making and saving your soul alive instead of taking chances of having your soul locked in a coffin, and nobody or nothing in particular to save something that cannot be saved. It is but weak-minded men and foolish women who waste time and energy in praying for dead souls to be saved, when they are told in the bible that such souls cannot be saved. Read Ezekiel 13.18 "Woe to the women that sew pillows upon all elbows, and make kerchiefs for the head of persons of every stature to hunt souls!" This means that no woman should give money or other gifts to preachers who pretend to pray for or save souls. If you can save people from dying, do so; otherwise waste no time. Ezekiel 13.20 "Behold, I am against your pillows, wherewith ye there hunt the souls to make them fly, and I will tear them from your arms; and I will let the souls go, even the souls that ye hunt." Ezekiel 13.21 "Your kerchiefs also will I tear, and deliver my people out of your hand, and they shall be no more in your hand to be hunted." Ezekiel 13.22 "Because with

Digitized by Google

lies ye have grieved the heart of the righteous." Ezekiel 13.23 "Therefore ye shall no more see false visions nor divine divinations." The above means that all women must stop believing and imagining god, angels, souls, or a hereafter.

Yes, it is more than high time for women and for all people to begin to remove the spiderwebs from their brains. Listen, is it possible for a lemon tree to bear and give out oranges! Is it possible for a hen to lay rooster eggs without a rooster! You try it, and you will fail in the attempt. Yet some weak-minded men and women will pay seven hundred thousand dollars for a picture of a supposed woman who never lived in this world of ours and who could never bring a boy or male into the world without the assistance of another male. Shame! Yes, a million times shame on you supposedly intelligent men and women who build churches and attend them to listen to such misleading thoughts. You do not know you are killing yourselves and your children thereby!

Many weak-mindea men and women will spend a lifetime's energy and savings for the love of a supposed Mary, yet, when I read Matthew 12.47 and 48, I discover that Jesus had very little respect for women and much less for his mother, Virgin Mary. Matthew 12.47 "And one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking to speak to thee." Matthew 12.48 "But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother?" So you can see, dear reader, that Jesus himself questioned as to who and what sort of a woman his mother was. I doubt very much whether Jesus would buy a picture of mother Mary, even though it were offered to him for the small sum of five cents, including frame, glass and all. And, too, there was no photography in those days, so the great unintelligence of some imagining men and women in these modern days is certainly to be wondered at if not admired.

Digitized by Google

You now know that wrong breathing causes wrong thinking, wrong thinking and wrong breathing causes wrong action and wrong work to be done throughout the world, and this is why there is so much trouble in the world, whereas the same troubles, through CORRECT BREATHING and THINKING, could be turned into true ideal intelligence and happiness.

Digitized by Google

PART FOURTEEN

AIR

What Air Is and Does—The Words Unity and Trinity Revealed.

THE words supreme or divine power, as originally written, simply mean an intelligent inventing human being, and not as some foolish and weak-minded people think it; a something in the sky. Take for instance wind which is air or spirit moving at a high and wild speed. It will take our hats off our heads and place it under a running car or wagon, and our hats are destroyed; it will blow signs from buildings and throw them upon people and kill them; it sinks ships out on the ocean, killing its crews and passengers; and it destroys buildings and churches as in a cyclone. But just see what an intelligent human being makes wind, spirit, or air do for us. He takes it in the wild state, harnesses it, and causes compressors to do work; musical instruments to furnish us with sweet music; electricity to light our streets and homes; ships to receive and send wireless messages; moving pictures to amuse and educate us; automobiles to run; and many other wonders.

Know that the earth constantly spins about twenty times faster than the fastest running electric fan, and this rapid turning creates momently and perpetually fresh wind and air for us, and we therefore never need fear that we will be shy of air. Air is not visible to the ignorant or clogged-up brain or mind, yet, it is, as you now understand, the entire maker of any and all things including itself. Although anybody and everybody uses air at all times, yet they do not understand

Digitized by Google

its invisible joke, where it is or what it does, and it is for this reason so many people go wrong.

Air is not visible to our eyes for the simple reason that it is the very same thing we use to see with. Air, therefore, has no special color for us until we look at water, air's baby, or at other matter like sand, rocks, or trees.

If air were withdrawn from you, you would soon lose your eyesight and see nothing with your eyes, think nothing with your brain, move nothing with your body, and in less than four minutes you would be sightless and dead. This proves that air or the very substance we use to see with, is air although not visible.

When you look into space or between yourself and a wall or other object, you seem to think that there is nothing between you and that wall or object, but there is. As I have stated above, the very thing that causes you to see and understand that object, is between you and the object. Shake your hand vigorously up and down or sideways, and you will discover that there is something between you and the object you are looking at. There is a feeling of a breeze or air all around your hand, and this is the very thing that causes you to see, live, think, and move. This is the thing that everybody is hunting for as a god, yet of which there is plenty all around and inside of them, no matter where they go or travel.

Air, too, works positively and negatively. If arrested, it becomes poisons of various kinds, and if set free, it purifies itself through its own constantly flowing and moving action the same as clean running water purifies dirty water. Just take a glance at a tightly closed room in which a person has committed suicide by filling it with a poisonous gas. Persons attempting to enter the room are almost overcome by the fumes that meet them. But as soon as a door or window is opened, the fresh air, having a chance of mixing with the poison-

Digitized by Google

ous gas air, causes the room to become healthful again, though a few minutes previous someone had died there. This proves that air works constantly for its own self-purification.

As air acts toward things outside our bodies, so does it act toward us and the inside of our bodies. Air is the very food supply that your brain uses to think with. Air, as it enters through your nose, touches the brain and compels you to think; it then spreads down to your eyes and makes you see; from the eyes, it spreads downwards throughout your body and helps and makes you hear, see, move, act, sleep, eat, digest your food, and also helps and makes you grow stronger, bigger, and better all the time. Air is the thing which causes everything and everybody to be and exist. It is air that enables us to build, to work, and to enjoy life.

AIR is in itself and in all matter, which is all in all AIR. We are in and over AIR, and AIR is all over and in us. This gives you the true secret and knowledge of AIR, matter, universe, and our being. Furthermore, know that it is a case of living and enjoying AIR-LIFE HERE, or else NO-WHERES!

It is but air that I use to think, to create thoughts, to write them into words, and to cause this book to appear. Air is what helps me to dictate the thoughts for this book. Air is what will cause the press to run and print this book and make this book possible. This will be done as soon as I give the order and say, yes; which I will do through and with a bit of air. (Not forgetting that matter-bodies who attend the printing-press, and matter-steel which is the printing-press itself, are also grown by and through air. It takes but air for you to see the words, to create thoughts, and to make you understand the reading matter in this book. It takes nothing more than a bit of free air to cause you to understand all the thoughts in this book, and to help you become as great a thinker and as happy and healthy a

Digitized by Google

person as there is. It is but air that makes you walk, talk, and move as you choose, while nature, animals, and air itself act and move wildly. So you see, you are therefore god and the divine and supreme power unto yourself, because you move and act when and which way you please through your intelligent action.

It is but air that enables the birds to sing, bells to ring, and people to swim. It is but air that enables a five ton automobile truck to move, an air compressor to work, and beasts and humanity to work and walk. It is but air that enables the cat and dog to play, and it is but air that causes a person to go wrong and to land in jail. It is but air and intelligence that causes one person to read the bible and discover the denial of the existence of god, and it is but air and ignorance that keeps another in the dark on the subject. The person who discovers the light becomes a pleasure and builder to self and humanity, while the ignorant person becomes destructive to self and society. The fault of ignorance is the individual's own, because he agrees to imagine through air that he cannot live unless he walks around with an invisible air chain around his neck. Air being free and not being able to be sold at a penny a barrel, causes some people to become dissatisfied with it. Such persons follow along proofless words like god, deity, spirit, and saviour, and through it lose life and all when they already have life and all. They act like children who exchange ten dollar gold pieces for lifeless dolls.

Know that with free air you can create any thought or word. If this were not so, you would not be able to think or read further, neither would it be possible for me to think or write further. Air is as free to you as it is to me. Through and with it you must make yourself great, not others or other things. Allow no one to deceive you on the great subject of free ordinary air, for with it you create intelligence, happiness, and perpetual life.

Digitized by Google

Since you now understand nearly all things about nature in general and yourself as well, you are perhaps desirous of knowing about the grade or kind of air to breathe. It is for this reason I am going to write a little longer on the subject so as to put you right on another secret or mystery of nature, but which is no mystery at all.

Have you noticed how some people move or travel from one place to another hunting for fresh air? These people seem to imagine that in some other spot they will find a better or healthier air than in the place they are in. They do not seem to understand that the constant turning and moving of the earth in space changes the air and atmosphere continually at all places and at all times by and through itself. The earth and nature does not and cannot sway, exist, or stay in the same spot or place for one instant, no more than water stops running in a running brook. The earth, swaying in space, and no one to sway, turn, or shift it, causes it to constantly create fresh air and to change space and atmosphere continually without our attention, just as you pay no attention as to where or how the dust moves or goes to when you dust your garments. If it were true that we would find better air in the next spot or in another place, we would all rush to that spot and live there. Such a thought or idea is wrong, because if you went to live in that spot, your body would soon get accustomed to that particular earth's odor, and you would be as bad off as before going there. Therefore, let your brain do your work for you, cause it to think right and you will breathe and act right, keep your windows open day and night, summer and winter, and your troubles about fresh air will be over; for you now know that all air and atmosphere constantly changes itself everywheres anyway.

Our bodies, imitating nature, constantly change from moment to moment; as you notice, you do not feel the

Digitized by Google

same to-day as you did five, ten, or fifteen years ago. You can therefore grasp the idea that your body also operates like the universe. This being so, your body is one laboratory, and the earth and endless space, the other. Since you live and exist upon the earth and between all endless space or air, it causes you to receive the benefit of two great mixing, changing, and living laboratories; one being your body, and the other, the universe at large. This ought to make you feel healthy and in good mood wherever you are at all times. Furthermore, you, standing and existing on the earth and looking at all things above and below you, calling them by name and understanding them, makes you divine and superior, while all other things that you call, handle, or name, are wild and inferior, excepting other human beings, of course.

The above gives you the true secret meaning of the word Unity, and you are therefore already greater than the pope in Rome, because he could not, until he reads this book, explain or tell you what the word really meant. By developing your brain as outlined in the next part, it will cause you to become the Trinity, and you will do it all with just a bit of ordinary AIR!

Digitized by Google

PART FIFTEEN

HOW TO DEVELOP THE BRAIN

How to Change the Animal Grade Thinking Brain Into an Ideal and Superior Grade.

EACH brain and all human brains, like all other things in the universe, grow in a wild state. A human being is the only thing in the universe that is capable of taking hold of his own brain (through thought) and gradually change it from a wild into a superior state.

Brains, like everything else in the universe, grow positively and negatively. The mail is the positive brain while the female is the negative. Again, each individual brain, whether male or female, has in itself the power of operating positively and negatively. If a man operates his brain in a positive style, he is a creator; while if a woman works her brain in a positive style, she is a destroyer. As for instance, it takes a male's positive thought and action, through the brain, to build a mansion, and it takes a female's positive-negative thought and action to destroy a mansion, as you note the militant suffragettes do over in London. Some few men will create new ideas, and other men will work, build, and construct; while some few women with negative brain thoughts and many more women to help them, will work wildly and destroy men's grand constructions. Man, therefore, builds up, and woman tears down. It was always so in the past, but will not and shall not be so in the future.

A man has the privilege of thinking and acting in both positive and negative styles, which means creating or else imitating; a woman, the negative only, which

Digitized by Google

means harmless imitating, or at her best, destroying. If a man thinks and acts positively, he, like the sun, moves but little, creates much, and is saved; but if a man thinks and acts in a negative style, he becomes a woman-man, and is caught in the female net and destroyed. If a man acts both positively and negatively as most men do, he is neither here nor there, and what little he builds or creates, he himself or through some woman, destroys and is also destroyed.

The brain of an adult male weighs about fifty ounces, while that of a female about forty-four. There are, however, some exceptions to this average. A human brain does not mature until about thirty to fifty years after birth. If, therefore, a human being marries before its brain is fully matured, such person is never but half alive or half conscious in the world, and but short lived. By abstaining from marriage until late years at least, the brain is able to become fully developed and matured, which in turn helps the brain and body to become consciously awake and to act perfectly and positively in all things and deeds. When I use the term or words, not marrying, I mean complete abstinence from the opposite sex at all costs and pains. These words should be strictly adhered to by all young men and women who are desirous of reaching the highest things in the world.

When a person once sets out to become ideal, he or she causes blind nature to obey all orders of the brain. Know, that when you once give orders to your body and brain as to your intentions, you will have no trouble with the opposite sex, for you will feel a greater being in accomplishing or conquering the weak and animal forces of blind nature which have been and are the ruination of humanity. To learn to abstain from the opposite sex, never think sex at all and never allow the brain to dwell upon such thoughts, and you will finally succeed. Do not indulge in animal food nor much food of any

Digitized by Google

kind. By abstaining from much food and the opposite sex, you cause the body and brain to grow into purity, power, and strength, and same will stay in and with you where it belongs. When young and other people will not dwell upon the thought of opposite sex, they will not have to use as much food and consequently their bodies will become clean, pure, and strong, without pimples or other troubles, for you now know that all sickness and disease comes from within.

I said in a former part that the human body, like the universe, is a laboratory. The body, therefore, creates waters, albumin, and germs for reproduction the same as wild nature does. After a human body and brain has grown to a certain state, there is a surplus of albumin in most all bodies. This albumin is eliminated from the body through its own machinery without any effort on the part of the individual. As for instance, using the toilet causes you to be awake and act during the process of elimination. While again, in the case referred to above, you will find that nature will eliminate or throw away from you any surplus or useless substance while you are asleep. But know, she does not do this until she has taken the very best life power from that matter and used it to rebuild, regrow, and restrengthen your entire body and brain. What you lose during sleep or what you seem to think is a loss, is no loss at all but simply an elimination of surplus water of which the body has no further use for; just as your body has no further use for your finger nails after they have served you and grown beyond the tips of your fingers; and, of course, the cutting of them are no loss nor harm to you or your body. Know, that whether or not there is an occasional nightly emission of substance from the body during sleep, it is of no harm whatever to the body. It shows in either case good bodily health and strength. But in all cases, you must never be awake or cause such elimination voluntarily or

Digitized by Google

consciously; for if you do, you are then sharpening down your only one pencil of life, and when that is gone you must go, too. I am well aware that misleading doctors inform otherwise on the subject. However, pay no attention to them nor to the advice of your best friends or folks, for no matter what they may tell you, they simply guess or inform you wrongly. The X-Ray machine in connection with moving pictures will prove my words true.

Abstinence from the opposite sex will cause a male brain to regrow itself and to operate positively. Such individual will possess great power to originate, change, and invent great things and ideas, and as soon as his ideas or inventions spread throughout the country or world, humanity as a whole receives and enjoys the great benefit of that creator's origination. New ideas or inventions benefit humanity the same as the arrival of a carload of new oranges in a city will benefit the people who buy same.

I find that the greatest and best thoughts or ideas about real wonder workers are never written out in book form. Lack of words or other good reasons are the cause. If the best, deepest, and highest thoughts in the world cannot be trusted or written into book form so that other men may grasp the ideas and imitate them, how is it possible for a woman or women at large, with less brains and a negative imitating grade of brains, to become our leaders and teach us laws or general knowledge as to how to do things or as to how things ought to be done!

As some men advance upwards, it naturally follows that in time other men and some women, too, are able to take a step higher. But if unthinking men and negative thinking women imagine that through suffragism, politics, socialism, praying, or passing laws into books for dollars will advance humanity or themselves socially or otherwise, they are indeed sadly mistaken. They will

Digitized by Google

discover it so if they work themselves to death for a while longer trying the impossible.

A woman's brain in originating ideas, is like trying to make bread out of a mixture of sand and water; which is foolish to begin with and ends badly. A woman cannot originate or create because she is not of a giving out nature. Her nature is only of a receiving kind. In other words, she can receive anything and everything in the world, and like an animal, will still continue to look for more. The only thing a woman ever gives out is a child, but she does this through pain. And as you now understand that children can be raised in incubators just as chickens are, you can therefore see that we cannot give the woman any thanks or credit even for bearing us children. And, too, they teach the children wrongly after they have them anyhow; and the best child or person in the world is not worth anything to society if it has to go down into the grave with its goodness.

A man with his positive brain can create one great wonder after another. A man can think for a few minutes, or half an hour, and create new mechanical or commercial ideas that will cause fifty or thousands of men to be kept busy mentally and physically for fifty or a hundred years thereafter. Notice how the inventing of steel, brass, typewriters, moving pictures, phonographs, automobiles, wireless telegraph, flying machines, and other inventions of men keep armies of men and women busy working out the originator's ideas.

Know and understand that the amount in ounces of brain matter you possess makes no particular difference, for your brain, like the body, constantly changes and regrows itself. It is therefore not the quantity but the quality that does good work. A few ounces of your brain well cultivated by yourself will do wonderful work for and with you.

The brain may be compared to a piece of land or

Digitized by Google

soil that a farmer owns. An expert or reasoning farmer will always make his little soil do great producing. A good farmer will study natural cause and effect about his land and nature entire. He will install all improvements and prepare everything in advance to face blind nature in any accidental happenings on his place. He will always have a place for everything and everything in its place, and it is a pleasure to pass by such a farm and to view the cleanliness and orderliness in everything, and it is but natural that such a farmer reaps good results. While again, the misunderstanding, thoughtless, and wild-brained farmer will always be in trouble, never have anything done in time, never keep anything in its place, never prepare for any accidents, never study natural causes, and thus makes a failure of land, crops, cattle, himself, family, and his neighbors also. When an accident strikes him, he wastes his good time praying when he ought to use it in repairing the damage done. While the bad farmer wastes his time praying to air that cannot help him, because the air did the damage, the good farmer is out enjoying automobile riding.

The above illustration, dear reader, holds good as to our brain. You now understand that all things act and work out through thought first, which is done with the brain. Here then is where the difference in individuals comes in, the same as the difference in farmer's land or farmers themselves. Your brain is your piece of soil, your body is your perpetual crop, your ears, eyes, mouth, and nostrils are your gates through which you alone allow your seed to enter into your brain and body. You may keep the gates closed at will and only open them for good to enter, or you may leave them wide open and let every wild thing enter, like the thoughtless farmer does, in which case you alone will always suffer. If you allow a wild thought to enter your brain, it grows there in that style like wild seeds do. For instance, foolish men and women allow themselves,

Digitized by Google

through their brains, to imagine that dead spirits talk to them or that there are other worlds to live in. It is not a fact that such is the truth, but they saw the words in print somewheres or heard some dreamer talk in that style, and allowing such a baseless idea to enter their brain, it stays and grows with them in that style and finally kills them. I could, for instance, write you a lie and say that I just saw god with one hundred thousand dead spirits riding in a golden automobile that had sixteen silver wheels on each side. I could further let the foolish thought go through my brain and tell you that there were four hundred and ninety-nine angels on one side of him and the devil with billions of bad spirits on the other side of him. All such thoughts, of course, although we are capable of creating them, are absolutely nothing but useless and a waste of energy because there is not a bit of truth nor reality to such ideas and we must stop fooling ourselves and feeding ourselves with such baseless imaginations that kill the human race.

In order to detect right from wrong or true from false you must cultivate your own brain yourself; no one else can do that for you because your brain is inside of yourself and not in another person. You can do the cultivating now while walking, talking, resting, writing, or working. If you once get started, go right on and make a success of it. Never allow yourself to fall back into the old rut or system of life again. I know you will enjoy the better change for we all learn to act and do things in a better way as soon as we hear of them and learn them.

To cause your brain to become superior, let it know that it is your clearing-house for your entire self and that from now on YOU-AIR are going to do all the directing of it. Know also that your brain is entirely by itself and for yourself, just as you are for yourself. There is no other person in the world who is able to taste,

Digitized by Google

smell, feel, hear, talk, sing, laugh, and enjoy with the same kind of a feeling as you do, at the same time. This is true even between children and parents or husband and wife. We may eat the same food but it will not taste the same to all of us.

Through the vastness and different change in atmosphere throughout the world, it causes our brain to grow individually different in style and taste as well as in design. As soon as you understand that, you will know that every other individual in the world feels and thinks somewhat different than you do, and that being the case, you will understand to grant every other individual in the world the same freedom in action and thought that you enjoy. If you find their mistakes too many, it is simply best for you to withdraw from them and their surroundings entirely. If, on the other hand, you find that you can help someone up a bit, do so; but in all cases remember to take care and protect yourself fully first. Then again, you must not try to gain anything through another's loss, directly or indirectly, because all such gains turn themselves back into a loss and you become the worse sufferer through it.

Since you now understand that you may cause your brain to gradually change from an animal grade into a superior grade, and since you also know that your brain is your entire clearing-house or headquarters for yourself, you will comprehend that all thoughts as well as taste, smell, feeling, hearing, talking, singing, laughing, crying, pain and pleasure must be recorded and go through your clearing-house or headquarters first, which means the brain; and here is where you must do all your checking up of receiving, holding, or rejecting of ideas and the sending of orders.

Your brain is also the great store and warehouse for yourself, as well as the great business house in and through which to transact all your business. In it, you figure out and take account of yourself and of itself,

Digitized by Google

how well you did in the past and how much better and greater you are doing at the present. Your great deeds of the present create in themselves the great, actual and living future.

Your brain is your private and secret storehouse. No one can enter it but yourself. It is only occasionally, if you care or choose, that you let another take half a glimpse inside of you. As a storehouse or warehouse, the brain keeps thoughts and things stored for you from the time you first start to think your first conscious or recalling thought. As you continue growing, developing, and history-making from childhood on, your brain or your warehouse continually keeps adding to itself, like an endless film, according to the way you yourself do the acting; just as a film in a moving picture show, when reeled off, will show upon the screen various actions and ideas which have previously been performed by persons. Know, though, that the film inside of you is much more wonderful and much greater than any other thing in the universe because it is endless to begin with and you can run it off in thought to yourself perpetually in a present or backward style or tell it in words in a backward or present style momently. If a person is a preacher, a fortune teller, a god dreamer, or half alive, such individual will tell you a lot of false stories and lies of what is going to happen in the future but which does not happen. However, while you possess the power of making your film run into an unreal or imaginary future, you must not let it dwell upon such, for the future is the actual and real living present and nothing more. The film inside of you can be changed by you instantly. You, through your brain, can see things greater than any moving picture film ever shows, and you do not even have to pay five cents for so doing.

The brain is in portions varying from half an inch to an inch in size perhaps. Each one of these little

Digitized by Google

portions will perform a different task or work for you, yet they are connected together and act as a whole. Therefore, alongside the film spot in your brain there is a little spot which acts as an experimenting station and is always ready and waiting for you that you may experiment with it. In that station or bit of brain you are able through air to think out new ideas, analyze them, and think out new inventions and designs. You are also able, through another spot in your brain, to figure out in advance what the outcome or results of the new ideas or combinations will be. You can decide in advance whether it will be to your advantage to undertake the new venture and to work it out actually or to drop it altogether. There are times when you work out a thing materially, and yet it does not result in entire satisfaction to you. In other words, your results were not as good as you planned them, but the experience you gain through the hardship and work simply guides and protects you from other or larger mistakes or losses in greater undertakings in the future. So you never need fear or stop going just because you do not gain in each and every one of your undertakings. The fact is, the more things you try to work out mechanically that you create mentally, the more experienced will you become and the greater and better will you grow.

There is another little spot in your brain that is capable of picking up from the air new ideas and inventions which are the creation of other persons. As you already know that thought travels instantaneously through the air, it must of necessity occur, that as soon as a person thinks a new invention, whether a change in shape, form, style, or design of a thing, the little brain spot will instantly pick up such and set the body to work on it. It is for this reason that at times patents are applied for by two parties living in different parts of the world, the applications reaching the Patent Office on the same day, and the designs and inventions being

Digitized by Google

identical although the applicants are entire strangers who do not even understand the same language, and since thought travels instantaneously, neither applicant can tell who the original originator was, or who did the original originating.

In your brain there is still another spot waiting for you which you can use or will act for you as a chemical laboratory. This laboratory will assist you in designing or creating new chemicals or different grades of chemicals, the same as some men in the past have caused many different colors of paints or other chemicals to appear. In the meanwhile, your chemical laboratory assists and keeps you away from eating and breathing poisonous substances which might kill you. So you see, you have many wonderful parts in your brain which accomplish many good things for you without you being aware of the fact. But just think how much more wonderful good these very same spots of brain will accomplish for you in the near future or as soon as you get acquainted and in real touch with them and help them act understandingly for and with you!

There is also a wonderful brain spot in you which acts and works for you as the greatest photograph studio known in the world. When a photographer takes a picture, he is obliged to use chemicals and spend or wait at least two to five minutes before he can see what the subject he snapped with his camera, looks like. But your brain spot, which acts for you as a photo-studio and photo-laboratory, does not wait five seconds nor even one second to see how a subject or a scene looks; it instantly distinguishes all subjects and colors as they appear before your eyes or as momentarily as you look at them. There is another wonder in this photo-laboratory brain spot of yours that neither a camera nor nature herself could ever imitate. For instance, you can close your eyes, think back, and make the past appear before you in as many subjects, scenes, and colors as you can re-

Digitized by Google

member seeing. All this is done by your brain, which, being the result of air and as soon as it comes in contact with air, is capable of instantly distinguishing all things and colors in the air for you, past and present, just as you are able to instantly distinguish your father, mother, or brother amongst a million strange people.

A little spot in your brain is able to distinguish for you sounds from friends or people you talked to many years ago. This is positive proof that when a person talks, his sounds exist in the air just as well as his thoughts. It always takes a living brain and air to distinguish and understand any or all things.

Besides the air carrying in itself all the wonderful things I have already mentioned to you, it also carries photographs of each individual. When you get out of bed and walk around in your room, or wherever you walk or move about, you constantly cause impressions of yourself in the air. These impressions always exist and move in the air. This causes the air to be filled with billions and billions of likenesses of people, the same as it is filled with sounds, thoughts, and all other gases, vapors, and things; and the brain, if you so choose, is capable of distinguishing many of these things for you instantly. If your or my image were not moving or flying in the air, no camera in the world could ever take a photo of you or me. When a camera is snapped it is the distance in air-light space between you and the camera that causes your air image to move and run into the inside of the camera, which causes and results in a photo, else there would be no photo; for remember, when a camera is held close to your face and snapped, it would show no picture at all, but just a spoiled plate.

The spiritualists, making statements that they have discovered something new when they snap a camera in a dark room and get impressions of people's faces who are either dead or alive, simply show their ignorance. The fact is that the ancient Hebrew writers,

Digitized by Google

thousands of years ago, knew, understood, and wrote about this. They pointed out that it is as natural for photos or impressions of people's faces to be and exist in the air, as it is for a feather to move about in the air if you were blowing and chasing it. You may note that all moving pictures, whether showing animals, machinery, nature, or human beings in action or otherwise, are taken in peaceful action with and through air, and are shown in the same manner. So you see, dear reader, that anything and everything is in the air and done with air, but that it takes a living, developed, and refined brain matter to detect, gather, and turn invisible things into visible things, knowledge, and wonders for our enjoyment.

I presume it will interest you to know that your brain, besides possessing the number of great and wonderful things already mentioned, also has an entire forest growing inside of it. The trees inside your brain may be many or few. They may be of many wild grades and variations, or of few but ideal variations. If a person pays no attention to the forest in his brain, it will grow wild trees and weeds of bad grades, the same as a farmer's land, if not attended to and watched, will grow weeds around his crop. The farmer who does not keep weeds away from his crop loses it; the individual who does not keep the weeds out of his brain loses his crop also, which means losing his life. If you had no opportunity, time, or knowledge of how things should or may grow in your garden or brain, then stop yourself now and instruct your brain that the wild growth of the forest must stop and be changed into a superior forest, garden, and brain. (Always remember that the words You or I signify AIR, or Air first, brain next, and body third, thus constituting the real trinity. In short, You or I means air, because without air there would be nothing and nobody, and it would be impossible for you to think You, I, or anything else; while with air,

Digitized by Google

you exist and can think and understand Air itself as well as You, I, and all other things. Since through the brain and with air you are a comprehender of brain and air, it makes you superior and god, and nothing else is god; and other human beings share likewise. But know that intelligent human beings never make a god of anything!)

Giving your orders and instructions to your brain for the better change, is like a farmer fertilizing his ground. After you have fertilized your brain, see to it that you become the real creator, overlord, and king in giving all ideal instructions to your brain with air thoughts.

After fertilization naturally comes the planting of seeds. You must therefore instruct your brain that it must make room for the new and beautiful grades of seeds and trees you intend planting in it. In starting to plant your new seeds, forget all the old filthy and troublesome thoughts. Never let them enter your brain again. You must not listen or pay any attention to the troublesome, weak, foolish, and false thoughts of other people; neither should you gossip or argue with people who are well advanced in years, but who understand less than two-year old children.

You should choose and use the very best and finest thought seeds to be planted inside your brain. Choose for your seed the best thoughts of the best men alive to-day, and always do so; or you may create new and better ideal thoughts yourself. Never use the names and ideas of dead people as seeds for yourself or to teach children by, no matter how great those men were or supposed to have been while living. One good, real, live man now, is worth more than a billion dead ones of a moment ago, two thousand years ago, or ten thousand years ago. Neither should you use as seeds for yourself or to your children as an example, men like Napoleon, or men of the present day who have a desire

Digitized by Google

to kill as in hunting. No human being of a cultivated brain will ever destroy life for consumption or self-pleasure. Any man or woman who picks up a gun or fishing rod and goes out hunting or fishing, shows the world that he or she is still a savage in mind and brain, and all such people, naturally, are destroyed and die because their own thoughts and ideas to destroy and kill, work and act back on themselves as a reward. Whenever we arrive at a stage where no human being uses animal flesh as a food, killing will stop. We will then be able to stop building battleships or training soldiers to kill, but until then it is best to continue imitating other countries, for it is the only means we have for self-protection against the ignorance of human beasts.

You now understand that the kind of thought you plant in your brain, just that kind and grade of brain and body will you raise, grow and become. Therefore, make your seed selections good, kind, and great. Gradually plant them in your brain, and they will start growing accordingly. They will naturally crowd and force out all troublesome, false, and superstitious thoughts just as light forces darkness from a room when a light is turned on. And where there is light there can be no darkness.

Besides planting the kindest and best seeds in your brain, also plant a perpetual shining light in it similar to the sun. By so doing you will be imitating it. Although the sun never stops shining, yet, in cloudy and rainy days the clouds prevent us from viewing her light. So, by having in your brain a bright light of your own, you will be able to use it happily always, regardless of whether the moon or sun ever shone again or not. And, too, to your refined shining light there can never be any clouds because your own bright and happy thoughts will always occupy the entire body and brain.

In your brain also plant an orchestra for producing sweet music. You can make it play the sweetest music

Digitized by Google

you ever listened to in or out of a music hall, or you can combine and create new music for yourself without using your voice. It has occurred that men with no musical education have composed through their brain the finest and sweetest music the world possesses to-day.

Above all things do not forget to plant a tree of everlasting and eternal life in your brain, for this tree will help to regrow and rebuild you as time goes on, and with it eternal life on this earth becomes possible.

As soon as your brain matures you will discover that you are able to do a great many things in a quicker and better way than you did formerly. Therefore, always keep busy at either inventing, designing, or other actual and useful work. Work at and in them regardless of whether there is a profit in it for you or not. Real and actual mental and physical work makes life, builds life, and keeps alive your body and brain, while laziness, praying, god and spirit dreaming, or preaching means death building or working towards death. Notice how nature always moves, turns, grows things, and works day and night; this is why she is perpetual and forever existent. In order to perpetuate our existence here, we must imitate her. We have the privilege, of course, of resting and sleeping, which is grand, but always work decently when you are awake. Do not graft or scheme upon other human beings because such kills and you lose all.

Know that your brain like a rubber sponge has the power of concentration, contraction, and expansion. A rubber sponge gives in all ways and sides no matter how hard you use, bend, or squeeze it, yet, the whole is always by and in itself; and your brain acts the same. Therefore, do not fear to use your brain for natural truth in any or many ways as much as you like or can; but it should always be for good only. If you think intelligently, your body will become as stern as steel, and your brain as kind as a lamb and as innocent as a kitten.

Digitized by Google

Know, that it is you alone who may have the pleasure of refining your own brain, because no one else can or dares touch it as close as you. Your brain is your own individual motor. To refine it, send in plenty ideal-air-thoughts, and the brain as well as your whole self will slowly, gradually, but surely grow into an ideal and superior grade.

Digitized by Google

PART SIXTEEN

DEATH

Death Explained.

DEATH, as you now understand, means no life, no feeling, no understanding, and no action. It takes but an instant to die. A great many people in this country and most people in Europe are wasting considerable time and money on dead plans as to how they would like things to happen to them after they get into the grave, but as we never had anyone come back to tell us how those plans worked, we can understand that they work out planless.

The preachers love to tell us just how some St. Peter or Paul is going to wait upon us to take us into a heaven or some other place as soon as we stop breathing. Because such an absurd idea was originated by some weak-minded person or pirate, does not make it a truth! Not even the holy pope in Rome cares to take any dead heaven chances. Note the doctors around him when he is sick! Although the old gent had a dream some time ago that the gates of heaven are already open for him and as soon as he dies he can march through the gates without an examination, yet he is hanging on to real life as long as he possibly can. No doubt he feels much safer alive here on the earth than dead in a silver coffin. I presume the old gent will eventually die because this is the punishment for ignorance. The National Bible Association ordered the word, hell, to be eliminated from the English bible. Many thanks to the bible association for its good reasoning. Since the word, hell, is the opposite of the word, heaven, and since the word, hell,

Digitized by Google

is done away with, its sister word, heaven, has to go with it, too! As hell and heaven are no more in existence, in fact never were, is it not a puzzle to know just where our preachers are going to go or land into after they are dead? Where, goodness, where!

Is it sensible or just for men, women, and children to think, talk, or write about death or dead-life after death, when everybody in the grand world is doing his or her utmost to live here always and now! Would any of those talkers, dreamers, or writers about an afterlife take chances of dying this moment, if you or I were to ask them to do so as a proof! Is it not high time that living people step in and run the grand living world instead of having it run by a deceiving-dying lying class!

If this world or earth is but a preparatory school, and the next world, or after death, is a better one, and if the writers of such ideas are convinced of it, why do they waste their good time here telling us about it! Why do they not immediately move into the next world and enjoy it! It seems that any sane and intelligent person will always take advantage of better and purer conditions as soon as he or she learns of them!

Some people claim that because Jesus died for our sake we must die also and then meet him in some unknown heaven or space as we fly-not! But when I read the bible, I discover that Jesus never died nor had any use for death or dead people. Read Matthew 8.21: "And another of the disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father." Matthew 8.22: "But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me; and leave the dead to bury their own dead." The above verses do not seem to show that Jesus cared much for the dead or dead ones, do they? To show the reader another fact that Jesus had no use for death or dying, just read Matthew 16.26: "For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his life? or what shall a man

Digitized by Google

give in exchange for his life?" The above words give you the hint for the eternal life on this earth without death; for, read Matthew 16.28: "Verily I say unto you, There are some of them that stand here, who shall in no wise taste of death." To show people that Jesus never died nor was crucified, just read Luke 24.38: "And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore do questionings arise in your heart?" Luke 24.39: "See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye behold me having." Luke 24.20: "And when he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet." Luke 24.21: "And while they still disbelieved for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here anything to eat?" Luke 24.42: "And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish." Luke 24.43: "And he took it, and ate before them." Now, if any good, kind-hearted and true-hearted Christian reads the above with specks on or off, will he still say that Jesus was crucified! Do not the above verses which are taken from near the closing of the writings of Luke show and prove positively that after the supposed crucifixion Jesus was still alive? The verses which I have quoted are taken from the New Testament. The writings about Jesus, as a whole, simply give us the hint for eternal life on this earth.

Do the above facts not positively prove that preachers who preach about the death of Jesus or hereafters to us, thereby showing us the way to die, are the very ones we ought to send to the lunatic asylum or the penitentiary! With this class we ought to send all the thoughtless men, women, theologists, theosophists, or any one else who tries to spoil a good human being's brain by teaching him death. If the preachers have a monopoly on the bible and pretend to be saviors of the public, why did they not preach eternal life on earth instead of eternal death, when the bible is full of verses teaching eternal life without death! As for

Digitized by Google

instance, Ezekiel 18.32: "For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord Jehovah: wherefore turn yourselves, and live." If anyone has a desire to die, that is their own private affair, but to teach young children and grown men and women with thoughts about a hereafter is a crime against humanity. Shame on such teachings and teachers! All the wars and murders that have occurred in the past are but a drop in the bucket compared with the harm that has been and still is caused by preachers of the past and present; and it is all so because the preachers preach god, spirit, and hereafters to us when they do not understand the first thing about natural conditions, neither do they understand the great, free, educational thoughts of the bible.

You now understand that a thought has an action to itself. As you notice, a wrong thought will cause a person to pick up a bottle of poison and drink it, thinking it to be the right medicine; the result being either sickness or death. So also does the impression of all preaching and religion in the world cause trouble and death. The bible as well as all the greatest thinkers the world had or has, deny the existence of god; while misleading preachers and women force the foolish false thought on their children, thereby causing a wrong thought to be absorbed by a good brain, and the result is, as in the case of the poison, always trouble and finally death. Every decent person who wishes to enjoy eternal and true life here must at once break and keep away themselves and their children from all churches and preachers forever.

When I searched into the origin of languages and words, I discovered that our preachers are cunning enough to make use of the words hope, faith, and belief, and these three words have been helping the preachers to prey upon humanity. Let me show you how you go wrong to believe without seeing. If I were to tell you

Digitized by Google

that I have two automobiles, and if you create enough faith, hope, and belief, or allow yourself to believe that my statement is true, we are then both deceived because I have not even one. The only way to test the truth of my statement would be to see with your eyes and brain the two automobiles and the paid receipt for same. You would then need no faith, hope, or belief whatever. Human beings and natural things need no faith in anything, for a thing in nature either works out in actual fact and reality and shows up like a flower in a garden or else there is nothing to it or behind it. If you place dough in a cold oven, you would get no bread, no matter how great your faith, hope, or belief might be; for that is the way things work in nature. Therefore, gather the three bad and useless words, namely, belief, faith, and hope, together in one bundle, and throw them away and out of your brain forever. Get down to actual things and you will accomplish real wonders.

To show how the preachers have been deceiving us, take the words "son of god." These words in reality simply mean the son of a man or any male, and not as they would have us believe, an impossible accident through a woman or so-called holy spirit. Read Galatians 3.26; "For ye are all sons of God." It is for this reason you find the bible quoting the words "son of man" as well as the words "son of god," for they both are and mean the same. The words "the father and son in you," simply mean any male previous to marriage, for as such he is a latent and prospective father and the future son is in him. This is all there is to the meaning of the above words; nothing more, nothing less.

Between the person who strives for death through the church and praying to imaginary spirits, and the other, as through the saloon, beer, wine, and whiskey spirits, there is absolutely no difference in brain grade. Through different methods they both work and aim for death, and both naturally receive what they desire,

Digitized by Google

Know and understand that since nobody or nothing taps you on the shoulders a year or two before you are born, and asks you whether you really care to be born into the world, and as to the choice of parents, or the environment you desire, there will therefore be nobody nor nothing waiting to receive or bother with you after you are dead, buried, or cremated; for this is the real law of nature. You can go to see a dead body and you will always find that they never do any business after death. They even have to be carried and lowered into the ground by living people.

Do not allow yourself to believe the lies which preachers and women tell you about living here before, for there is absolutely nothing to such foolish and ridiculous ideas; neither must you think or allow yourself to believe that if you once die you will go somewheres to live or come back again. Nature's blind work is not of this kind. She simply tears a body, soul, and everything else to pieces and scatters them after death, the same as a horse or automobile running into a plate-glass window, smashes it into thousands of pieces and scatters them in all directions.

Have you ever noticed the smoke coming out of a chimney, or the steam evaporating from a boiling kettle? You see it with your eyes for a moment and then it rises and goes up in the air and vanishes. In other words the air takes the smoke or steam unto itself, tears it into bits of nothing, and the wind gets in between them and scatters them everywheres. This shows that the substance and vapor that arises from a dead body through the earth, and which some people call soul, receive the same treatment. Although you can see with your eyes the smoke coming out from a man's mouth while he is smoking, yet, in a few seconds you do not see it any more, and if we allow ourselves to die, our finish is the same; for all things are alike to blind nature.

Digitized by Google

I am now going to show you how impossible it is to feel, live, or do any business after death. My next two illustrations are so logical and truthful that even the most lying and deceiving male and female preacher, editorial writer, theologist, spiritualist, or theosophist will be obliged to acknowledge the true facts and at once and forever stop preaching religion, death, or about life hereafter. When you go to sleep some night, and your sleep, let us say, is good, sweet, and sound, without any disturbance or dreams, do you not, as you awake in the morning, think back to the night's sleep, as to whether it is you yourself who are alive? In other words you slept so soundly during that night, that if you had never awakened, you would never have known nor felt the worse or the difference. But since you did wake up and are alive again, you feel very happy indeed, and it is almost a surprise to you how it all occurred, and you smile to yourself over the affair. Now, is this not a fact? It therefore proves that the materialization of such a thing as soul-living, or feeling after death, is like trying to force a rooster to understand the words in the bible.

My second illustration is this. If you are reading these words at the present moment, you are aware that you are alive, else it would be impossible for you to hold this book or read it. You are also aware of the fact that you were born once. You will also admit that sometime in the past you yourself were but one year old. You will admit also, that every grown person in the world, whether male or female, sometime in the past was two years old. No doubt, your folks or some of your friends have told you that when you were but two or three years old you did many funny things. It may have been that you were mischievous; running after some neighbor's goat; pulling a cat's tail, and also causing your parents or neighbors considerable trouble and pleasure as children do. You are also aware, and

Digitized by Google

you are your own and my witness to my statements, that when you were about two or two and a half years old you were actually alive, running around, playing, crying, talking, sleeping, eating, and actually doing almost as many things as you are doing now, only in a different way. Also bear in mind the fact that what you did or what happened to you has happened to me and everybody else who is alive and grown to-day, only others have acted in a somewhat different way than you or I. Other human beings who will be born into the world in the future, will also do about the same. Notice then, that you, as a child, growing towards real greatness of life-understanding; you, as a child, to be grown into the greatest and most wonderful thing in the universe; you, as a child, to grow towards the power to create thoughts and to understand the difference in things from the center of the ocean to way beyond the sun; you, because of the fact that you were a thinking child, caused yourself to become what you are now and to enable you to think about great living things, yet, if you tried your utmost at this live moment, you could never, for all the money in the world, throw yourself back and remember the thought-feeling you thought or felt when you were first born, or when two years old. Now, if this is a fact, which it is, how in the world will you or any person with common ordinary horse-sense allow himself to believe about feeling or living after death! Or how can we believe lying and deceiving preachers who tell us that when we die, we are going to go to heaven or march with spirits, or that god is going to take us into his arms and teach us how to play a golden harp, or else will ditch us into a burning hell! Can you, as a living and intelligent person, comprehend such a thoughtless idea? Is it not most ridiculous and childish to waste time to listen to or entertain such foolish ideas about living after death!

Remember this, too, that when you were two years

Digitized by Google

old you were really alive. You were running around, crying, playing, eating, desiring and calling for water, food, or some other thing, which in all cases took as much thought power for you, as a child, as it does now when you desire things. And if you cannot remember the feeling or a thought when you were two years old and growing toward real life, how are you or your soul going to do any thinking, feeling, flying, moving, and playing with spirits or harps after being dead or buried! Can you think, please! You will admit that you were in better shape when two years old and are in better shape now and will be so in the future, if alive, than you would be, dead in a grave!

You already understand that death means destruction, and this is why everybody hates it. The air itself hates it. It is for this reason you get a cold and shivering feeling the moment a thought about death strikes your brain and body. If the soul and god are things that can only meet, talk, and do business together after we are dead and buried in a grave, then me for real living life right here! Observe how easy it is to change the horrible word or death thought into the life thought. Notice also how happy your whole body becomes the moment you think life. Your whole being takes on millions of atoms of life energy, and grows you stronger, happier, and healthier with every air thought of life. So get wise and live! It is just as cheap and more pleasant!

I have talked with many people on the subject as to how far a human being can throw himself back in remembering a thought or feeling of their young days. I have received answers from many men and women, and they all vary. Some can only remember back as far as twelve years of age; others to ten years of age; a large percentage can throw itself back as to remembering their first conscious thought of real life or living feeling, when about six or seven years of age; some can

Digitized by Google

go back to four years, and still others to less than three years. I, personally, can remember my third year's birthday. It therefore shows that I lived almost three years in actual living and acting without knowing or feeling that I ever lived those three years. This is positive proof that I stand no show whatever, of doing any feeling, existing, flying, or dreaming, knowingly or unknowingly, after death.

The first thought that I can remember, sprang into existence in a second, and from that time on I remember my whole life from year to year the same as anybody else does. There are many thoughts we do not care to carry with us and we naturally forget them. I remember my first thought in life as finding myself sitting at a little table and eating breakfast. I remember, and remember it well, that the plate was half-full, when the first conscious life thought came to me. I also remember my getting off the chair and away from the table, and running around and playing afterwards. Yet, it is impossible for me to remember how I started or began to eat that breakfast that morning; neither can I remember my getting up on the chair to sit down to eat the first half of that plate of breakfast food, nor can I remember the feeling or taste of the first half of that plate of food, while I do the last half. What has happened to me has happened to you and everybody else in a similar style but under different circumstances. And if I cannot at this moment remember how I felt while eating the first half of that plate of food, or how I felt the first two years of my actual life, although doing real living, I am therefore convinced that neither you nor other human beings in the world, including deceiving preachers, will ever do any living or feeling if they are once put into a crematory or covered up with sand, earth and stone, as after death.

Now, dear reader, you, as a witness, feel that I have told the absolute truth. Therefore become wise and tell

Digitized by Google

preachers and other people who talk to you of life hereafter or death to go and palm off their dead knowledge to those who are already dead, or else to keep it until they get into the grave themselves, and they will then have plenty of time to talk it over with their dead neighbors. Tell them that life to you is too sweet here, and that you are too busy enjoying living and have no time to waste with searchers for after-death-life which means destruction.

Digitized by Google

PART SEVENTEEN

LIFE

Life Explained.

LIFE is the opposite of death. It takes but a second to become death; it also takes but a second to become life. In other words, life springs into existence as quick as death springs out of existence. Life's greatest wish is always wanting and desiring to live. There is a vast difference between life and living. If you are reading this book now, you are not doing life, but living. The time of life is a quick change, and this is known by the human race as conception, which means creation. After your life springs into existence you simply continue evoluting, developing, growing, and changing. It is for this reason that it causes you not to feel the same from day to day or year to year. As soon as you become conscious it is your duty to keep on developing yourself continually and to keep on living, because you had your life and death long ago. If you will balance yourself between death (which is apt to happen to you if you allow deceiving preachers to teach you death) and the life which you already received before you became alive, you will save yourself. So steer wisely between these two extremes and use your little wise brain and a bit of free air, and just continue smiling, living, and developing.

While visiting the National Museum in Washington, D. C., I saw many old specimens amongst which I noticed a skeleton of an animal recorded as being over three millions of years in age. This is positive proof that this old earth has been working and moving for millions and

Digitized by Google

millions of years. The thought struck me while looking at the old specimen, that I, as a youngster, used to ask preachers how and why it was that the Christian Calendar shows this world to be only eighteen hundred and some odd years old, and the Jewish Calendar, about six thousand years old. Their reply to me was that god made it so. I then asked them what god was doing before that time! I also asked, that if god can make worlds, earths, animals, human beings, calendars, and bibles, and wants us to pray to him, why is it that the same god cannot keep us from sickness, trouble and dying, if we are his chosen children! I said to the preachers, would a sane parent ever think of killing its own good children! I also pointed out that animals never build churches, and animals never pray! I told and showed them that hogs, cattle, elephants, dogs, and cats have no bible. Chickens, mice, and ants cannot even read the bible! Why is it then, that the god we do so much praying to, does not allow us to live on this earth eternally, which ought to be just as easy for god to do as it is to kill us! He at least ought to reward us a little better than animals! But the preachers could never answer these questions, and since I have discovered what big-sized liars they are, by telling us that there is a god where the bible states there is none, I afterwards did no more wondering at their deceptions. For read Corinthians 3.16 "Know ye not that ye are a temple of God." Corinthians 3.17 "For the temple of God is holy, and such are ye." These extracts positively prove that the preachers have been a curse to the world because they have not told us the real truth and meaning of the bible, that we are the gods and none else, and on account of this, they have forced our parents and us into all misery and trouble.

On account of the free thoughts written in the bible about life and a paradise, it caused such places to be built and they are already in existence in this world.

Digitized by Google

The reader can visit these places and see them while alive, and he will try to keep alive afterwards. To see such places, all you have to do is to step into the National Library in Washington, D. C. As you step into this building, walk up a flight or two of stairs, raise your head and allow your eyes to look up at the ceiling. You will see a beautiful piece of art work which no angels, spirits, jehovahs, including all the gods that were ever written about or prayed to in the world, could ever turn out or imitate. They could not even imagine as handsome a piece of art work as you will find in actual existence in this ceiling. When you look upon that ceiling, you will not be deceived by anyone telling you how the ceiling came about or might come about after you die, for you will be able to see and judge the actual facts through your brain and know them to be so because it is so before you.

It is impossible for me to write out on paper just what or how much actual wonder you see in this piece of architecture, for no words in the English language can ever express it. However, for the benefit of readers who may live too far away from Washington, I will in a few words roughly describe what this ceiling shows, and that will not be a millionth part of the actual view and reality. In that ceiling you will see, know, and understand that some man or a few men, through their brains, designed the style and coloring for it. You will also understand that some more few men labored to set out the work or worked at it materially in order to complete the originators' ideas. You will find by looking at the ceiling, actual material of gilded and other colored chips of tile and metal set together. The wonderful setting of these little chips will give you and do give you a magnificent variety of colors and designs of a force and beauty indescribable. The beauty of that ceiling's design will make you admit that no god nor heaven could ever give or show you, after death, any-

Digitized by Google

thing like it. In fact, you will never take any more chances of getting away from this earth to hunt for any false life, gods, or heavens. If you see this ceiling, you will know and understand that you want to see nothing more nor better. You will then understand that if such a wonderful piece of art work is possible on this earth by mere men, then this earth is the only place to live and to enjoy real life in. If you once look at that ceiling, the life force, art, and design will remain in your brain and will help you create beautiful life thoughts continually, no matter where you are.

Another place to visit and in which to see a real paradise, is the New York Hippodrome. Almost everybody in the United States is acquainted with the name, Hippodrome. I knew of the place for many years, in fact had passed by it many a time while visiting New York City, but never took the time to see what goes on in that place. To me the thought was that it was nothing more than a large theater or circus-place. Somehow, in the fall of 1912 I decided to go into the place to see what goes on in such a large building. As I entered, I could see that the stage was about as large as a government post-office building in a small city. During the performance I saw more people or actors on the stage at one time, than I had seen in many whole towns while traveling. But this did not interest me very much because I had seen many actors before. I felt that the show was about over, and simply had seen a large stage with many people acting upon it at one time, which, of course, is a wonderful thing to witness, but could not be considered great for our modern days. But as I was so thinking, the management, without knowing what I was thinking about, sprang a joke or surprise on me as well as on the rest of the audience by staging or producing a scene named, The Silver Palace of Universal Peace. And as I sat, and looked and gazed at the beautiful scene, I was astonished at its ideal imagination but real design. What

Digitized by Google

I saw in the ceiling at Washington, D. C., and what I saw here, convinced me more than ever and will convince everybody who will see these, that there is no other place in the universe where anything like it can be seen or anything better is wanted to look at. You will more than admit that no god could ever make anything like it or imagine anything like it, even if he tried to. It simply takes men's ingenuity, through brains, to produce these beautiful scenes.

In just as few words as is possible I am going to give the reader part of a glimpse of what the scene in the New York Hippodrome looks like. At first a large space opens up on the stage floor, and you see a number of large beautiful fountains of spraying water appear. The electric light effects as well as the flowing streams of water produce a variation of rays and colors in front of your eyes that make you feel amazed and immovable; yet, knowing that you are alive in reality, and that it is yourself who are really looking on and seeing an actual, but almost unimaginable true and beautiful scene before you. Gradually you will feel drifting, drifting, slowly and slowly into real, actual, fairy land. Not the one we used to read about in books or the ones mother used to tell us, nor those the preachers would like to have us believe we are going to see or move into after death. No! Not a hundred million times from it! As you sit here and at the same time watch and enjoy the scene before you in its beautiful effects which are also combined, created, and made possible by mere men, you say to yourself, where is there any god or angel in the universe that could ever begin to imagine and imitate such color effects in reality! You will say that the rainbow looks like an old fire-smoked apron when compared to the glittering beauty you see in those last minutes at the Hippodrome; and as you see it all, you understand it all. You will then know and understand that you could not expect anything like it or anything near like it flying

Digitized by Google

around in the air or in a coffin as after death. Since you see it all before you in real beauty, and knowing that live men have caused it to appear, you will feel that it is with living people that we must stay and help make the world more beautiful than ever.

What you see in the ceiling at Washington, D. C., instils in you such a strong feeling of life that you never afterwards desire to die; and what you see in the New York Hippodrome does the same and more. This is because, during the view, the moving and flowing streams of water, with the electric lights playing upon them and upon the colored glass, form such a beautiful style and produce such wonderful effects that you feel satisfied you have seen the real paradise of the world. I just wish I could put its impression into words, but it is impossible. The best I can say to the reader is to go and visit these places, and you will see and understand the truth. If you go to view these places do so with but little or no food in your stomach and you will see better. This is not written as an advertisement for the Hippodrome, for I hardly believe that the Hippodrome's wonderful production needs any free advertising, as godless god does. The fact is that the management of the Hippodrome knows not that I was there, and they much less know what I am writing now. I doubt whether they will know what I am saying about them for a long time after this book is out and read by the public.

Remember, therefore, that real true life or living is valuable and is to be done on this earth only. Do not be deceived nor allow yourself to be deceived by anyone telling you otherwise. You can feel that the truth is so through yourself. Those who preach or talk life on other planets or worlds for us, are the very ones who never care to go there quickly. They always send for a doctor when they think they are about to lose real life here. And, too, people who are not satisfied here, would not be satisfied on other worlds or planets! There-

Digitized by Google

fore, that class of people naturally loses all it has while hunting for more, because it does not take care of what it already has.

The trouble with humanity at large is, that it is simply walking around half alive, and wasting energy in trying to force dead thoughts onto themselves, which means operating and going against nature, brain, and body.

Life is not as you chase after it in churches, saloons, smoking, flesh eating, praying, drinking, sex, law-passing, heavens, or skies, but as you think, create, combine, and make it in any spot you are at all times, and altogether away from such places. In other words, you are the designer and creator of your own life making at all times as you live; not as you imitate and follow the wrong, false, dying-imitating class.

Know that your living presently and from moment to moment means the hourly, daily, and constant evoluting, developing and changing of your brain and body, which causes you to walk, talk, sleep, laugh, work, and live; and as there is no turning point for the brain and body, nor time in nature, then continue real and actual living.

Digitized by Google

PART EIGHTEEN

THE LIFE ROOT OF A HUMAN BEING

The Perpetual Life Root of a Human Being Explained.

In the American Museum of Natural History of New York City I noticed a portion of a tree taken from the western slope of the Rocky Mountains in Central California and which was recorded as being about fifteen hundred years old when cut. Other trees are known to have lived five thousand years or longer; in fact, a tree in Mexico, still living and growing, is said to be over five thousand years old. Stone, marble, and other substances will live for hundreds and thousands of years. Think of it, dear reader! An ordinary tree or rock with no understanding whatsoever has learned to grow and live for thousands of years, while we human beings, having all the privileges in the world of moving about from one place to another; of exchanging good ideas between one another; of understanding to move away from dangerous surroundings as soon as we notice them; we, it seems, have not learned to use our brains or intelligence to imitate an ordinary tree or rock!

I have already explained to you that we and our bodies imitate nature in every action perpetually. This being the case, the only question that could arise in anybody's brain about eternal life is as to how do we get our perpetual life root. You will notice that a thing which has an opportunity of possessing a perpetual fresh life root supply need never die. If a tree, for instance, would or could walk out from the place it grows in and change its place every five or ten years, it would live perpetually and forever, because the new spot would

Digitized by Google

cause the tree to draw new and fresh substance for its roots and self, thereby keeping fresh and young always. In other words age or time to the tree would make no difference.

A human body grows in just the reverse position of that of the tree, and different from that of all other animals or things in the universe. Since we grow in the opposite position of the tree it makes our head the root source, and not the feet or stomach as people imagine, for you will notice that without the head you cannot lift a finger or foot nor drink any water, do any work, or enjoy life. Without a head no life is possible; while without some other parts of the body we can go on and live as some cripples do. Also notice that if you were to cover a person's body below the neck so that no air could come in contact with the surface of his body, such person would continue to live for months and months without much harm; but just cover a person's head in the same manner, and in less than four minutes that body would be entirely dead. You can therefore readily understand that our life root source is the head.

Since you now understand that your head is your root source, and that your body including your head and brain always renews itself without your attention, and since you already understand that air is the life root feeder, and is free all about you, anywheres and everywheres, because you can perpetually draw it from the sky, ocean, any room, or street at any time, you can therefore understand that the possibility of living forever is now possible to you as well as to everybody else, and you must begin to make it so.

Most of the lessons in this book seem to appear almost the same, yet they are not. The reason for this is that air entering through your nose, which means breathing, causes life; afterwards, touching the brain, causes thinking; then, spreading throughout the body, causes sight, hearing, motion and action. This operates

Digitized by Google

back and forth in different ways and yet all operate together, just as various lines of street cars are run and many buildings are lit with the electricity generated by one motor. Although these lessons are simple, yet they will jar the biggest heads when they discover that in just these few lessons the entire secret of nature and eternal life is contained. (It is little we need for perfection, but we are hunting for so useless-much in a wrong direction!) Now that you know it, make good use of it. When you read and study this book and learn its simple lessons you will find it child's play to carry out the ideas contained therein; yet remember it is in here the whole mystery of life and the universe is revealed and explained. Upon the rules and lessons as laid out in this book rests yours as well as humanity's final road to perfection. There has never been anything like it written or discovered, and there can never be anything more discovered to make for human perfect-perfection, because there is nothing more needed. Just these simple rules do the whole trick.

Remember this, too. You, existing upon and between matter and endless space or air, makes you the greatest thing in the universe. Your root draws from any and all things for you because you may see, name, think, change, and combine all other things, while all other things are and become powerless as soon as they get into your hands if you so desire. No sun, moon, stars, spirit, air, beast, or matter can or is capable of thinking us or about us, while we understand them, root and all, as well as our own root. It is always we who first think all other things, and it is now time to do a little thinking for our own benefit. Understand fully that the root of your life, which is air, is with you, and constantly changing, with, for, about you at any and all places as you walk, sit, ride, fly, work, swim, sleep, or play. Do not follow the ideas of the silly, dead or dying class. Learn the true natural living way, because you and your root

Digitized by Google

are changing and filling full of fresh life constantly, just as the water changes and falls momently and constantly at the Niagara Falls.

Therefore become alive and wake up to nature's and your great and free gift of perpetual life. It is yours for the taking and making it through your nose and brain.

A life touch in your live brain with just a bit of ordinary free AIR makes and is your here-eternal perpetual living LIFE-ROOT!

Digitized by Google

PART ENDLESS

A PERSONAL CHAT WITH THE READER

How would you like to know that the Century Dictionary, requoting Schaff-Herzog, defines the word Theology as mystical speculation, and the word Theosophy as the complete knowledge concerning god, while the Standard Dictionary defines the word Theosophy as mystical speculation. In other words the highest authorities define the words Theology and Theosophy as mystical speculation. Mystical speculation means gambling of a worse nature than that of the race track, cards, Wall Street, or any other form of gambling. If you gamble for money you exchange your real hard-earned cash for one chance in a hundred of its coming back to you; and as a rule, it never does come back, otherwise there would be no gambling houses in existence. But in mystical speculation you do not stand even this one chance in a hundred. Yet some well educated and refined people belong to Theosophical and Theological societies, not understanding that they are losing their own lives through it and causing the flowers of humanity to go down into the grave through such learning and following.

How would you like to know that the demand of votes for women is like a child crying for a doll! You know the end of every doll is destruction, and if votes for women are granted, the results are and will be the same.

How would you like to know that if votes were granted all women, they would demand us to vote them into jobs; then after placing them in these positions they would come back at us and ask us to show them

Digitized by Google

how the work ought to be done; and we paying them for imitating lazy useless work!

How would you like to know that where there is suffragism the wife of a Republican naturally votes the Republican ticket, while that of a Democrat, the Democratic ticket; unless, of course, there is a fight between them the night before election, in which case the result might be different. But this is evened up by other neighbors having similar trouble the same night. And as a whole the results are about the same for all political parties after the election is over, with or without women's votes!

How would you like to know that if every male and female in the world, from fifteen years up, were allowed to vote, conditions would not become a bit better but worse instead; because an increase in votes and doubling the number of senators and congressmen involves an increased and unnecessary expenditure through taxation upon us, and is like pasting double the amount of postage stamps needed upon a letter; it serves no purpose, and wastes money where money could be saved! Of course, money represents sweat and labor! So do not allow silly suffragettes to make you think they are going to save the world or accomplish wonders. The fact is, it will mean much harder times and useless labor and sweating for the masses. The wise, of course, are always on top and always will be there, and whatever move the ignorant masses make, in turn reacts upon them, and it is themselves who have to suffer the consequences.

How would you like to know that if our good unthinkable socialists and suffragettes were to pass a law to-morrow to have a doctor walk in front of you, a policeman at your right, a soldier at your left, and a priest behind you at all times, you would then be worse off than now, on account of the expense and lack of privacy. Besides, your troubles do not come from without, but

Digitized by Google

from within. If you are mentally suffering on account of troubles from without, it is so because you allowed yourself to get into them or allowed them to lodge within you. If troubles are once inside of you, no policeman, soldier, or law can get them out of you because an outsider would kill you if he touched the deepest trouble spot within you. You are the only one who can get troubles out of yourself safely and cheaply.

How would you like to know that a government cannot and does not work out in the same manner as the home does. In other words, our parents work and feed themselves and us at the same time, but a government cannot do so because we feed it. So you see that law-passing is foolish and useless; in fact, it works a great hardship upon us every time a new law is passed and added to the many useless ones already in existence. The best law in the world is to force no law upon others nor yourself. Through this method we help to relieve the burden from humanity and ourselves. You now understand that all things work back upon the originator, and with laws it is the same; the more laws, the worse for the public and us.

How would you like to know that a government cannot help us out of trouble because we ourselves are the government, and officials only serve us! Furthermore, governments have no money to give us else they would not be in debt. The fact that nearly all governments owe billions of dollars shows that they are not rich. If socialists and suffragettes imagine they have something new or better to teach the wisest men of the world, they will discover that they themselves have not learned the A B of things as yet. Most people are quick in learning wrong ideas, but such ideas will never work out materially. Charity begins at home, and if socialists and suffragettes will start to work on real things and altogether away from governments and laws and accomplish something, they may win us over in time!

Digitized by Google

How would you like to know that if the socialists were successful in taking over the government and in doing away with money, issuing script instead, most everybody in the country would become a counterfeiter, for it would be easy to imitate any other process of money making, other than the one we have at present. The money in use now is the best form of exchange we have, and the secret way of making it is withheld from even some of the presidents and kings. Although you, I, and others could watch the printing and coining of money and even work at it as employees, yet we would not know it all; else secret service men could never catch counterfeiters. So you see, the socialists, unionists, and suffragettes have nothing for us worth having. Even the Progressive Party will make nothing but trouble for us, for as soon as they will try to put a good thing down, they hurt that good thing as well as others. A worse thing is bad and useless to bother with, for it would be like trying to help a child carry two hundred pounds of flour on its back.

How would you like to know that neither a minimum wage scale nor a child labor law will improve our conditions, because if fifty dollars per week were the minimum wage, eggs would advance to three dollars each and all other things in proportion and nothing would be gained!

How would you like to know that such a thing as working people getting the full compensation of their toil is an impossibility. Such a thing cannot be figured out, because nature sometimes grows a large crop with little seed, a small crop with much seed, and without notice, in various ways, destroys an entire crop altogether; and the same rule applies in all industries! Furthermore, an inventor and manufacturer is entitled to the largest share of things, because without them there is no work for the worker; yet, they take more chances than the working man, and never complain!

Digitized by Google

Take for example this book. I could spread one-tenth of the thoughts contained herein, in twenty or more volumes, and charge you one hundred dollars a copy, and, as I have no dictator over me I could easily do it. Yet I use my good reason and liberal judgment to benefit most, and other good selfishless inventors do the same. Such a thing, therefore, as full compensation for toil or the actual known value of a thing, does not exist! Of course, all students of economy or any other silly person can easily figure out that when he buys a completed commodity as a loaf of bread at four cents and sells it at five, that there is one cent profit on it, or when he buys a gross of shoe laces at six cents per dozen and sells it at ten cents per dozen that there is four cents profit on it, and so forth, but if those rules could be applied to the first stage of the production of those articles and of all other articles and commodities, barring all accidents directly or indirectly, and if the same rule could be applied to the lasting, as to the wear, tear, and finish of those and all other commodities and articles, the economists and socialists, including all who complain of the high cost of high living, would be justified in giving us their advice; but as I stated above, the unforeseen natural accidents, including human ignorance changes those conditions, and it is therefore impossible to figure out the actual value of anything. The socialists' and economists' advice, therefore, is absolutely worthless and useless. The best thing we can do, therefore, is let the rich have their riches, because their wealth does not harm us as long as we do not try to imitate or hurt them. We must and can create and invent new things, and become rich, too; in fact, if you have something new, different, and useful, they will assist you as soon as you so prove it.

How would you like to know that no form of government, system, or method will ever be able to give the unemployed jobs and steady work because no one can

Digitized by Google

tell how long a suit of clothes or a pair of shoes are going to last before they are worn out. There is only one natural method through which all unemployed can make a living when there is no work for them in cities, and that is to get out on land and raise their own necessary food supply. This is a much better method than wasting time and energy marching to city halls and demanding jobs of officials who themselves hold only temporary jobs. Through the former method they will naturally gain both self-employment and food but through the latter, no work and poverty.

How would you like to know that if you have a real good thing, whether socialism, suffragism, or any other thing that might advance the human race, you must demonstrate it privately. In other words, you must not try to use a government to help you force it upon the people. If your thing is really good, the people will take to it freely, without votes or government force!

How would you like to know that amongst humanity as among cattle, the ignorant and weak sheep love to follow the blind, and the blind love to be their shepherds so they may devour them. Labor leaders, preachers, politicians, suffragettes, and some lawyers are the blind shepherds. So beware!

How would you like to know that if you will not follow the blind nor lead the ignorant, you will lose nothing but gain everything you need.

How would you like to know that true and wise thinking men and women never follow nor lead, but always attend to their own affairs, because they are their own wise sheep, shepherds, and lords!

How would you like to know that to lead a rich and ideal life, and travel, takes but very little money nowadays. Knowledge does it!

How would you like to know that if the United States desires to become prosperous again it must do three things and do them immediately. The first thing is to

Digitized by Google

at once do away with the Income Tax Law. Secondly, to do away with the Sherman Anti-Trust Law; the government must either buy out a trust or never bother it, for interference makes bad conditions worse. Thirdly, to protect the scab. A person has a right to strike, but he has none to stop another person from working. A striker is not only interfering with the scab but with the manufacturer, seller, the buying public, and government as well. He is a disgrace to self, community, country, and world. As previously stated, if he gains a few cents per day he causes all commodities to advance in proportion; and neither he nor anybody else gains anything but trouble in the end. The sooner the government steps in and makes the striker strike peacefully, the better for the striker, government, and all concerned.

How would you like to know that if it takes the service of several thousand people to collect the income tax yearly, there is nothing but trouble ahead for the government because such method does not relieve the pressure from its people but makes it harder for them, for the manufacturer and dealer puts the pressure upon the consumer. Again, the wise manufacturer and inventor becomes lazy and stops inventing and manufacturing altogether because they do not like to sweat, plan, and work, and then have the profits of their labor taken away by a government; and whenever they stop acting, there is nothing but poverty in the country.

How would you like to know that the Income Tax Law is an invisible and perpetual tax upon all goods that have already been taxed during the process of manufacture, storage, sale, and purchase, and such tax will finally put us into the same condition as Europe is in. People, who imagine that the customs and laws of Europe are better than those we had in the United States, and think we must imitate them, must know the true fact that if such laws were beneficial, people, at the present time, would be emigrating to Europe, instead of

Digitized by Google

to the United States. Europe has such a method running for thousands of years and is with it poorer to-day than ever!

How would you like to know that no government currency bill, federal reserve bank, or government bank examining methods will ever help us out of trouble, because government bank examiners and officials go wrong as much as other people do. If government regulation and supervision over business and banks were a remedy, there ought to be no business or bank failures at the present time. But the sad fact is that there are about as many if not more bank failures to-day with government examination than there were twenty years ago without. I discovered that only about two per cent. of the world's bankers really understand banking methods. Ignorant people call these few, trusts; but in reality it is the trusts that keep the world from ruination. The remaining ninety-eight per cent. of the world's bankers are nothing more than imitators. It is not advisable for the public to waste money in hiring officials to teach or watch imitating bankers go wrong because the fact is that these officials understand banking much less than even an imitating banker, else they would not work for the government for a few thousand dollars per year.

How would you like to know that we cannot go back to competitive methods as in the days of old because the United States Patent Office grants about three thousand new patents each month, an average of nearly a hundred per day, and as each of these go to help lighten the burdens of humanity you can therefore see that this reacts upon money and business conditions. Those who stand in the way or try to force useless laws upon us are only our worst enemies. We simply have to travel through a certain amount of hardship until we reach perfection. We have already gone more than halfways, but the less the sleepy heads interfere, the sooner will we arrive there!

Digitized by Google

How would you like to know that the recalling of officials and direct primaries will never improve politics because there is more than one way to do a thing wrong!

How would you like to know that if the Republican Party cannot keep this country living, moving, and growing upwards, no other party can or will!

How would you like to know that if the Democratic or any other party were to stay in Washington and rule the country without some Republicans helping and showing them how, we would be obliged to send to Europe for a collection in order to pay the president's salary when pay-day arrived at the Capitol!

How would you like to know that the Republican Party is like a rich man's cook. When you are around him you will always get something good to eat if you work for it; while the Democratic and all other minor parties are like a poor man's cook; poor food or nothing is all you can get out of him no matter how hard you work. What the Republican Party understands in a minute, the Democratic and other parties cannot learn in a thousand years because the grade of brains is too poor. Therefore, whenever the Republican elephant works and moves, we all live and ride; and whenever we lock or tie him out, most of us have to stop easy riding, for there is not as much room to ride upon a donkey, horse, or mule, as upon a big elephant. The Republican Party will make you pay three dollars for an article which may seem too high in price, but it will always help and give you a chance to earn five dollars, which means, you earn your living, buy and own the article, and save a little for a rainy day. The Democratic or other parties will show and tell you how you may purchase the same article for a dollar, but it will always be impossible for them to help you earn the dollar to get the article with! The above is not written for the benefit of the Republican Party, but is simply a state-

Digitized by Google

ment of facts as I have found them. The truth is I am not a Republican and have not voted the ticket for the last twelve years, but it seems that for the benefit of everybody concerned I shall perhaps do so henceforth.

How would you like to know that if a person is President of the United States for one term and has failed to learn during that time how little he can really do for the country, his second term will spoil him altogether. And whenever a third term is desired by an individual, it simply proves that the table board and salary we furnished him during his first term was an absolute waste to the country. Therefore, one presidential term for an individual during his life is proper, and should never be two or three.

How would you like to know that a president can neither run nor feed a people because the people feed and run him. If presidents were to get sick and die each week, the country would go on and do business just as though nothing had happened.

How would you like to know that it is women who have dragged humanity into all the trouble it is in at present. This is true, because our mothers start us off wrong or help us into wrong methods. I, like anyone else, care not or do not feel like telling it verbally to my mother, because, as a woman, she would not understand, or else cry. But, as wrong methods if continued will never get us into the right way or road, I therefore feel not ashamed to so confess it in writing so all mothers and women may read, learn, understand, and henceforth do better.

How would you like to know that all sensible questions are answered in this book? You are the one who must now make good, and you will have no complaints to make.

How would you like to know that love is like an orange; if you consume it, you have nothing left. The

Digitized by Google

more love you have, the better for your health and self, but you must not exchange or waste it for it is worth all to you. The place for it is in you, if you wish to be yourself. Kindness and truth is all you need to give out to others or the world.

How would you like to know that there are many great and good thoughts and things in the world, but when you consume or make use of them, you have caused such to be changed into bad things or nothing.

You already know that there are a great many bad things and thoughts in the world, and if you allow yourself to get into them directly or indirectly, you will in all cases pay the penalty and suffer for so doing, because all bad things when made use of, will always become worse, or turn into destruction.

Digitized by Google

The words or thoughts below are bad, and will always destroy the user of same:	Below are good thoughts, safe for everybody to use:	Below are bad, good and best ideas and things. The safest plan is to keep away from them entirely:
	AIR	
Faith	Action	Hope
Ignorance	Brain	Believing
Baptism	Circumcision	.....
Dirty	Clean	.....
Vulgar	Decent	.....
Nowheres	Earthly Existence	.....
Belief	Facts	Guessing
Selfish	Free	Jealousy
Bad	Good	Best
Pain	Gladness	Pleasure
Death	Growth	High Living
Giving	Holding	Taking
Stealing	Honesty	Repenting
Girls	I—if male	Boys
Boys	I—if female	Girls
Women	I—if male	Men
Men	I—if female	Women
Drink	I	Wine
Smoke	I	Song
Flesh-eating	I	Gambling
Mean	Ideal	Great
Wrong	Just	Right
Hate	Kindness	Love
Stopping	Learning	Gossiping
Preachers	Myself	Police
Others belongings	My Own	.....
Shabby	Neat	Showy
Troublesome	Orderly	Interfering
Past	Present	Future
Low grades	Quality	.....
Foolish	Reason	Smart
Superstition	Science	Religious Imagination
Weak	Sound	Strong
Nothing	Some	Much
Stingy	Saving	Spending
Crying	Smiling	Laughing
False	Truth	.....
Christian Science	Understanding	Money
Fiction	Variety in things	Books
Idleness	Work	Laziness
Churches	WORLD	Colleges

By reading the above words from left to right and connecting them together between the left and middle

Digitized by Google

columns you will be able to perceive additional and valuable ideas. By reading the words from left to right in the three rows, back and forth and up and down, and at the same time thinking between lines, you will discover still more valuable and personal instructions that will help you immensely.

I shall soon cease adding thoughts into this book. I am going to ask you that after you have finished reading it and rested for a few days, to pick up the book and read it over, then again, and then again. You will always find and discover something new and instructive in ideas apparently out of it as you re-read it.

This book is your property, and the good that you find in it you yourself should make use of, for it belongs to you alone. You should not figure that there might be someone across the street, across the road, or in the next block, who is going to do better, and that you will wait until such person starts to practice the good thoughts that are laid out in this book. No, dear reader! Not at all do I want you to think or act in this wise. I want you to become the first good model in your vicinity, wherever you are. By first becoming perfect yourself you will be strong enough to carry yourself first. Others will soon imitate and follow you, for that is the way people naturally do. When people read, they do not try to understand the meaning of what they read. You will notice that in schools or colleges all scholars and students use the same books to read and study from. They all use the very same pages, and yet but few out of the many really make good. It is simply the lack of knowing how to think right that causes all the trouble in this world. So the time to start the good work is right now, this very moment!

Since lack of knowledge about correct thinking has never been given out to the world before, it is best to forgive and forget all false mistakes of the past. It is for this reason I am working hard to place this book

Digitized by Google

before the public. People, reading this book, will think it easy to spread these simple thoughts on paper, but I did not find it so at all. I searched many libraries, east, south, west, and even in Europe to see if I could lay my hands upon one volume that would contain and give the entire knowledge of the natural creation of matter, explain the origin of humanity, and give instructions for human self-perfection; but I could find none. I would gladly and willingly have given all the savings I possessed if I could have gotten a book explaining things half as good as this book does. I feel that a book of this kind ought to have been written for the benefit of humanity long ago. If you got this book for less than a thousand dollars you have gained all the difference in cash. To a millionaire, a million dollars would not be any too little to pay for a copy of this writing; yet, the price is almost nothing, to the poor as well as to the rich. So make good use of what you learn in this book, and I as well as you, will feel well rewarded.

You need not waste any time waiting for my next book, for I have already covered all important thoughts that are needed for self-efficiency in this book. My next book will be nothing more than a waste of time, money, and energy, for me to write it and for you to read it. It will contain a few thoughts similar to those already set forth in this book, except that they will be worded in a different way. The reason for my writing the next book is simply to show the decent and respectable orthodox person who is at present at an advanced age how he takes death lessons and teaches his children the same, by going to church or helping to build churches, or listening to preachers and praying. It will also show how all modern and newly started religious creeds put their followers into trouble in the same way. As a whole, the next book will read or taste more like fiction. But since I advise no one to read fiction at all, you will therefore see that my fiction will contain true and concrete facts

Digitized by Google

about real fiction. I shall use churches and preachers as my subject matter unless all churches walk off and away from the ground they are standing on, and unless preachers resign their positions. If they do resign and close the churches I shall then write no more. Therefore, know that this book is the only book you and the world needs for human perfection. Study it, read it, and make it, for you need no other. No other book can give you any more nor as much knowledge on the subject. If you do a little thinking in between the lines you will be able to connect up and discover anything and everything you desire information upon.

It may happen that between the time the manuscript leaves me and the book is printed, a mistake in a word or thought may slip into this book accidentally. Should I discover such at any time, I will have corrections with instructions printed and will mail them to you free of charge if your name and address is found on file.

I shall ask you, as the reader, to speak a good word about this book to all your friends, neighbors, and acquaintances. Advise them to buy and read a copy, for this book is the true modern bible with true thoughts truly spread. Nothing is hidden or covered. This book is written in a style that anybody who reads, learns the truth and feels it; he is not deceived as is the case, somewhat, with all other bibles. I want this book spread everywhere possible. It is not the profit I am after, but rather a large number of truth-understanding men, women, and children. I feel that we have been deceived and have suffered long enough by and through weak and wrong thoughts. It is high time to stop riding in a cart that is put before the horse. Let us change and start riding in a modern automobile with a ten mile speed limit, and let us become self-perfect human beings.

To reach self-efficiency is now possible as you already understand, through the use of your piece of free brain in connection with free air. It is easily done amongst and betwixt a free-thinking people, in a free republic,

Digitized by Google

Fill out and mail application below for possible corrected matter.

EDA **Application Blank.**

_____19

The Law of Nature Publishing House,
New York City.

To the Author:

I herewith desire to take advantage of your offer to mail me free, any corrections you may make in the future, pertaining to this book.

Sincerely yours,

Name_____

Address _____

City _____ Town _____

State _____

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

and in a great free land which is the glorious and free United States. If it were dollars I were after, I would not write a book in this style. A little deceiving fiction, which would be a million times easier for me to write, would bring me much more money I presume, than this book may. Besides, you perhaps have noticed that the first word on the outside cover of this book reads "knowledge," and the last word inside of this book also reads "knowledge." You will at a glance understand that there is no ending and no beginning to the author's knowledge, and he is learning more and more daily. What you read or learn in its pages between these two words is only a drop in the bucket, of the quantity and quality there is yet to be drawn from the same piece of live brain. I, as the owner and drawer of this piece of brain, can turn and bend it into other shapes and styles, and make it earn dollars, as it formerly did, at different trades besides that of writing books.

Now, dear reader, what others have done or are doing, you can do, too. I have given you all the knowledge necessary to start you on the right road for self-efficiency. Through the study and understanding of nature at large and yourself, you acquire knowledge. Knowledge, as written on the front cover of this book, will help you in time to acquire truth, which causes sincerity and honesty, and when you combine knowledge and truth together you learn to acquire and also become a power. Power, as written on the front cover of this book, means to know and understand what the outcome of things may be, before really doing anything, good or bad; and if good things need be done, you do them or have them done with the least amount of anxiety and energy expended or wasted. When you have acquired and mastered the understanding of knowledge, truth, and power, you have your freedom, because you are then able to accomplish more in an hour than you would otherwise in a week; and all this spare time you use to build up more power and knowledge inside of you.

Digitized by Google

Let us all admit that we have been good-sized grown people, but wearing childish garments for thousands of years. Let us all admit that thousands of years ought to be long enough time for us to play a childish and useless game which has killed most and the best of humanity, and is still doing it. Let us also admit that we have been exchanging golden truths for wrong and rusty lies, or, exchanging eternal life for eternal death!

Let us all now admit and say that it took us thousands of years to grow and develop from a wild bud into a sprouting rose. Let us say, too, that in spite of all wrong forces and thoughts which wild ignorance has been trying and is trying to force upon us, we, as a whole, have at last reached or arrived at true blossoming time. Let us take sure care now, that humanity, which is the rose, when it awakens fully this time, will make itself grow and bloom perpetually; for know, that we are the only possible perpetual living things and also the only possible deathless things in the world and universe!

If you enjoy and gain wisdom
From reading this book,
Tell me so in a letter.

But if you find
Something still missing,
Tell me so, too:

And if necessary (?)
I may or may not
Write the next one better.

If you cannot find, discover, or combine any idea or thought about anything in the world or universe in and through your brain with free air, then read this book over again: think as you read, and begin with the very first word on the cover, KNOWLEDGE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

CANCELLED

7953139

OCT - 4 1999

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google